THE LIFE and ADVENTURES OF *PETER WILKINS*, A CORNISH Man:

Relating particularly,

His Shipwreck near the South Pole; his wonderful Passage thro' a subterraneous Cavern into a kind of new World; his there meeting with a Gawry or flying Woman, whose Life he preserved, and afterwards married her; his extraordinary Conveyance to the Country of Glumms and Gawrys, or Men and Women that fly. Likewise a Description of this strange Country, with the Laws, Customs, and Manners of its Inhabitants, and the Author's remarkable Transactions among them.

Taken from his own Mouth, in his Passage to *England*, from off *Cape Horn* in *America*, in the Ship *Hector*.

With an INTRODUCTION, giving an Account of the surprizing Manner of his coming on board that Vessel, and his Death on his landing at *Plymouth* in the Year 1739.

Illustrated with several CUTS, clearly and distinctly representing the Structure and Mechanism of the Wings of the Glumms and Gawrys, and the Manner in which they use them either to swim or fly.

By R. S. *a Passenger in the* Hector.

In TWO VOLUMES.

DUBLIN:
Printed by GEORGE FAULKNER in *Essex-street*.
MDCCLI.


BRITISH MUSEUM

TO the RIGHT HONOURABLE

ELIZABETH,

Countess of *Northumberland.*

MADAM,

FEW Authors, I believe, who write in my Way, (whatever View they may set out with) can, in the Prosecution of their Work, forbear to dress their fictitious Characters, in the real Ornaments themselves have been most delighted with.

This, I confeſs, hath been my Caſe, in the Perſon of *Youwarkee*, in the following Sheets; for having formed her Body, I found myſelf at an inexpreſſible Loſs how to adorn her Mind in the maſterly Sentiments I coveted to endue her with; 'till I recollected the moſt amiable Pattern in your Ladyſhip; a ſingle View of which, at a Time of the utmoſt Fatigue to his Lordſhip, hath charmed my Imagination ever ſince.

If a Participater of the Cares of Life in general, alleviates the Concerns of Man; what an invaluable Bleſſing muſt that Lady prove, to the Softneſs of whoſe Sex Nature hath conjoined an Aptitude for Council, an

Application

Application, Zeal and Dispatch, but too rarely found in his own?

Had my Situation in Life been so happy as to have presented me with Opportunities of more frequent and minuter Remarks upon your Ladyship's Conduct, I might have defy'd the whole *British* Fair to have outshone my southern Gawry: For if, to a majestick Form and extensive Capacity, I had been qualified to have copied that natural Sweetness of Disposition, that maternal Tenderness, that Chearfulness, that Complacency, Condescension, Affability, and unaffected Benevolence, which so apparently distinguish the Countess of *Northumberland*; I had exibited in

my *Yoawarkee*, a Standard for future Generations.

Madam, I am the more ſenſible of my Speaking but the Truth, from the late Inſtance of your Benignity, which intitles me to the Honour of ſubſcribing myſelf,

Madam,

Your Ladyſhip's

moſt obliged and

moſt obedient Servant

R. P.

THE

INTRODUCTION.

IT might be looked upon as impertinent in me, who am about to give the Life of another, to trouble the Reader with any of my own Concerns, or the Affairs that led me into the *South-Seas*. Therefore, I shall only acquaint him, that in my Return on board the *Hector*, as a Passenger, round *Cape Horn*, for *England*, full late in the Season, the Wind and Currents setting strong against us, our Ship drove more southerly by several Degrees than the usual Course, even to the Latitude of 75 or 76; when the Wind chopping about, we began to resume our intended Way. It was about the Middle of *June*, when the Days are there at the shortest, on a very starry and Moon-light Night, that we observed at some Distance a very black Cloud, but seemingly of no extraordinary Size or Height, moving very fast towards us, and seeming to follow the Ship, which then made great Way. Every one on Deck was very curi-

ous in obſerving its Motions; and perceiving it frequently to divide, and preſently to cloſe again, and not to continue long in any determined Shape, our Captain, who had never before been ſo far to the Southward as he then found himſelf, had many Conjectures what this Phenomenon might portend; and every one offering his own Opinion, it ſeemed at laſt to be generally agreed, that there might poſſibly be a Storm gathering in the Air, of which this was the Prognoſtick; and by its following, and nearly keeping Pace with us, we were in great Fear leſt it ſhould break upon and overwhelm us, if not carefully avoided. Our Commander therefore, as it approached nearer and nearer, ordered one of the Ship's Guns to be fired, to try if the Percuſſion of the Air would diſperſe it. This was no ſooner done, than we heard a prodigious Flounce in the Water, at but a ſmall Diſtance from the Ship, on the Weather Quarter; and after a violent Noiſe, or Cry in the Air, the Cloud, that upon our firing diſſipated, ſeemed to return again, but by Degrees diſappeared. Whilſt we were all very much ſurprized at this unexpected Accident, I, being naturally very curious, and inquiſitive into the Cauſes of all unuſual Incidents, begged the Captain to ſend the Boat, to ſee, if poſſible, what it was that had fallen from the Cloud, and offered

offered myſelf to make one in her. He was much againſt this at firſt, as it would retard his Voyage, now we were going ſo ſmoothly before the Wind. But in the Midſt of our Debate, we plainly heard a Voice calling out for Help, in our own Toung, like a Perſon in great Diſtreſs. I then inſiſted on going, and not ſuffering a Fellow-Creature to periſh for the Sake of a trifling Delay. In compliance with my reſolute Demand, he ſlackened Sail; and hoiſting out the Boat, myſelf and ſeven others made to the Cry; and ſoon found it to come from an elderly Man, labouring for Life, with his Arms acroſs ſeveral long Poles, of equal Size at both Ends, very light, and tied to each other in a very odd Manner. The Sailors at firſt were very fearful of aſſiſting, or coming near him; crying to each other he muſt be a Monſter, and perhaps might overſet the Boat and deſtroy them; but hearing him ſpeak *Engliſh*, I was very angry with them for their fooliſh Apprehenſions, and cauſed them to clap their Oars under him; and at length we got him into the Boat. He had an extravagant Beard, and alſo long blackiſh Hair upon his Head. As ſoon as he could ſpeak (for he was almoſt ſpent) he very familiarly took me by the Hand, I having ſet myſelf cloſe by him to obſerve him, and ſqueezing it, thanked me very kindly for my Civility to him,

nim, and likewise thanked all the Sailors. I then asked him by what possible Accident he came there; but he shook his Head, declining to satisfy my Curiosity. Hereupon reflecting, that it might just then be troublesome for him to speak, and that we should have Leisure enough in our Voyage for him to relate, and me to hear, his Story, (which, from the surprizing Manner of his falling amongst us, I could not but believe would contain something very remarkable) I waved any further Speech with him at that Time.

We had him to the Ship, and taking off his wet Clothes, put him to bed in my Cabbin; and I having a large Provision of Stores on board, and no Concern in the Ship, grew very fond of him, and supplied him with every thing he wanted. In our frequent Discourses together he had several Times dropped loose Hints of his past Transactions, which but the more inflamed me with Impatience to hear the Whole of them. About this Time, having just begun to double the Cape, our Captain thought of watering at the first convenient Place; and finding the Stranger had no Money to pay his Passage, and that he had been from *England* no less than thirty-five Years, despairing of his Reward for conducting him thither, he intimated to him, that he must expect to be put on shore, to shift for himself, when

we

we put in for Water. This intirely sunk the Stranger's Spirits, and gave me great Concern; insomuch that I fully resolved, if the Captain should really prove such a Brute, to take the Payment of his Passage on myself.

As we came nearer to the destined Watering, the Captain spoke the plainer of his Intentions, (for I had not yet hinted my Design to him or any one else;) and one Morning the Stranger came into my Cabbin, with Tears in his Eyes, telling me, he verily believed the Captain would be as good as his Word, and set him on shore, which he very much dreaded. I did not chuse to tell him immediately what I designed in his Favour, but asked him if he could think of no Way of satisfying the Captain, or any one else who might thereupon be induced to engage for him; and further, how he expected to live when he should get to *England*, a Man quite forgotten and pennyless? Hereupon he told me, he had ever since his being on board, considering his destitute Condition, entertained a Thought of having his Adventures written; which, as there was something so uncommon in them, he was sure the World would be glad to know; and he had flattered himself with Hopes of raising somewhat by the Sale of them to put him in a Way of Living: But, as it was plain now, he should never see *England* without my Assistance;

Assistance; if I would answer for his Passage, and write his Life, he would communicate to me a faithful Narrative thereof, which he believed would pay me to the full, any Charge I might be at on his Account. I was very well pleased with this Overture; no from the Prospect of Gain by the Copy, but from the Expectation I had of being fully satisfied in what I had so long desired to know. So I told him I would make him easy in that Respect. This quite transported him. He caressed me, and called me his Deliverer; and was then going open-mouthed to the Captain to tell him so: but I put a Stop to that; for, says I, (though I insist upon hearing your Story) the Captain may yet relent of his Purpose, and not leave you on shore; and if that should prove the Case, I shall neither part with Money for you, nor you with your Interest in your Adventures to me: Whereupon he agreed I was right, and desisted.

When we had taken in best Part of our Water, and the Boat was going its last Turn, the Captain ordered up the strange Man, as they called him, and told him he must go on board the Boat, which was to leave him on shore, with some few Provisions. I happening to hear nothing of these Orders, they were so sudden, the poor Man was afraid, after all, he should have been hurried to Land without my Knowledge; but

begging

begging very hard of the Captain only for Leave to ſpeak with me before he went, I was called, (though with ſome Reluctance; for the Captain diſliked me, for the Liberties I frequently took with him, on account of his brutal Behaviour.) I expoſtulated with the cruel Wretch on the Inhumanity of the Action he was about; telling him, if he had reſolved the poor Man ſhould periſh, it would have been better to have ſuffered him to do ſo, when he was at the laſt Extremity, than to expoſe him afreſh, by this Means to a Death as certain, in a more lingering and miſerable Way. But the Savage being reſolved, and nothing moved by what I ſaid, I paid him Part of the Paſſage down, and agreed to pay the reſt at our Arrival in *England*,

Thus having reprieved the poor Man, the nex Thing was to enter upon my new Employ of Amanuenſis. And having a long Space of Time before us, we allotted two Hours every Morning for the Purpoſe of writing down his Life from his own Mouth; and frequently, when Wind and Weather kept us below, we ſpent ſome Time of an Afternoon in the ſame Exerciſe, till we had quite compleated it. But then there were ſome Things in it ſo indeſcribable by Words, that if I had not had ſome Knowledge alſo in Drawing, our Hiſtory had alſo been very incompleat. Thus it muſt have been,

eſpecially,

especially, in the Description of the *Glumms* and *Gawrys* therein mentioned. In order to gain (that so I might communicate) a clear Idea of these, I made several Drawings of them, in all the Forms and Attitudes, I could conceive from his Discourses and Accounts; and at length, after divers Trials, I made such exact Delineations, that he declared they could not have been more perfect Resemblances, if I had drawn them from the Life. Upon a Survey, he confessed the very Persons themselves could not have been more exact. I also drew with my Pencil the Figure of an aireal Engagement, which, having likewise had his Approbation, I have given a Draught of, Plate the *sixth*.

Then, having finished the Work to our mutual Satisfaction, I locked it up, in order to peruse it at Leisure, intending to have presented it to him at our Arrival in *England*, to dispose of as he pleased, in such a Way as might have conduced most to his Profit; for I resolved, notwithstanding our Agreement, and the Obligations he was under to me, that the Whole of that should be his own. But he, having been in a declining State some time before we reached shore, died the very Night we landed; and his Funeral falling upon me, I thought I had the greatest Right to the Manuscript: Which however, I had no Design to have parted with;

with; but ſhewing it to ſome judicious Friends, I have by them been prevailed with, not to conceal from the World, what may prove ſo very entertaining, and perhaps uſeful.

R. P.

THE

THE

CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

CHAP. II.

CHAP. III.

CHAP. IV.

CHAP. V.

CHAP. VI.

CHAP. VII.

CHAP. VIII.

CHAP. IX.

CHAP. X.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

CHAP. XII.

CHAP. XIII.

CHAP. XIV.

CHAP. XV.

CHAP. XVI.

CHAP. XVII.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

CHAP. XX.

CHAP. XXI.

CHAP. XXII.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

CHAP. XXIV.

CHAP. XXV.

CHAP. XXVI.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVII.

CHAP. XXVIII.

CHAP. XXIX.

A GENUINE ACCOUNT OF THE LIFE OF *PETER WILKINS.*

CHAP. I.

Giving an Account of the Author's Birth and Family; the Fondness of his Mother; his being put to an Academy at sixteen by the Advice of his Friend; his Thoughts of his own Illiterature.

I WAS born at *Penhale*, in the County of *Cornwall*, on the 21st Day of *December*, 1685, about four Months after my Father *Peter Wilkins*, who was a zealous Protestant of the Church of *England*, had been executed by *Jefferys*, in *Somersetshire*, for joining in the Design of raising the Duke of *Monmouth* to the *British* Throne. I was named, after my Father and Grand-father, *Peter*, and was my Father's only Child by *Alice* his Wife, the Daughter of *John Capert*, a Clergyman in a neighbouring Village. My Grandfather was a Shopkeeper at *Newport*,

who, by great Frugality, and extraordinary Application, had raised a Fortune of about one hundred and sixty Pounds a Year in Lands, and a considerable Sum of ready Money; all which at his Death devolved upon my Father, as his only Child; who being no less parsimonious than my Grandfather, and living upon his own Estate, had much improved it in Value, before his Marriage with my Mother; but, he coming to that unhappy End, my Mother, after my Birth, placed all her Affection upon me, (her growing Hopes as she call'd me) and used every Method, in my Minority, of encreasing the Store for my Benefit.

In this Manner she went on, till I grew too big, as I thought, for Confinement at the Apron-string, being then about fourteen Years of Age; and having met with so much Indulgence from her, for that Reason, found very little or no Contradiction from any body else; so I looked on myself as a Person of some Consequence, and began to take all Opportunities of enjoying the Company of my Neighbours, who hinted, frequently, that the Restraint I was under, was too great a Curb upon an Inclination like mine of seeing the World; but my Mother, still impatient of any little Absence, by excessive Fondness, and encouraging of every Inclination I seemed to have, when she could be a Partaker with me, kept me within Bounds of Restraint, till I arrived at my sixteenth Year.

About this time I got acquainted with a Country Gentleman, of a small paternal Estate, which had been never the better for being in his Hands, and had some uneasy Demands upon it. He soon grew very fond of me, hoping, as I had Reason, afterwards to believe, by a Union with my Mother,

ther, to set himself free from his Intanglements. She was then about Thirty-five Years old, and still continued my Father's Widow, out of particular Regard to me, as I have all the Reason in the World to believe. She was really a beautiful Woman, and of a sanguine Complexion; but had always carried herself with so much Reserve, and given so little Encouragement to any of the other Sex, that she had passed her Widowhood with very few Solicitations to alter her Way of Life. This Gentleman, observing my Mother's Conduct, in order to ingratiate himself with her, had shewn numberless Instances of Regard for me, and, as he told my Mother, had observed many Things in my Discourse, Actions, and Turn of Mind, that presaged wonderful Expectations from me, if my Genius was but properly cultivated.

This Discourse, from a Man of very good Parts, and esteemed by every body an accomplished Gentleman, by Degrees wrought upon my Mother, and more and more inflamed her with a Desire of adding what Lustre she could to my applauded Abilities, and influenced her so far as to ask his Advice in what Manner most properly to proceed with me. My Gentleman then had his Desire; for, he feared not the Widow, could he but properly dispose of her Charge; so, haveing desired a little Time to consider of a Matter of such Importance, he soon after told her, he thought the most useful Method of establishing me, would be at an Academy, kept by a very worthy and judicious Gentleman, about thirty or more Miles from us, in *Somersetshire*; where, if I could but be admitted, the Master taking in but a stated Number of Students at a Time, he

did not in the leaſt doubt, but I ſhould fully anſwer the Character he had given her of me, and out-ſhine moſt of my Cotemporaries.

My Mother, over-anxious for my good, ſeeming to liſten to this Propoſal, my Friend, as I call him, propoſed taking a Journey himſelf to the Academy, to ſee if any Place was vacant for my Reception, and learn the Terms of my Admiſſion; and in three Days Time returned with an engaging Account of the Place, the Maſter, the Regularity of the Scholars, of an Apartment ſecured for my Reception, and, in ſhort, whatever elſe might captivate my Mother's Opinion in Favour of his Scheme; and indeed, tho' he acted principally from another Motive, as was plain afterwards, I can't help thinking, he believed it to be the beſt way of diſpoſing of a Lad, ſixteen Years old, born to a pretty Fortune, and who, at that Age, could but juſt read a Chapter in the Teſtament: For he had before beat my Mother quite out of her Inclination to a Grammar School in the Neighbourhood, from a Contempt, he ſaid, it would bring upon me, from Lads much my Juniors in Years, by being placed in the firſt Rudiments of Learning with them.

Well, the whole Concern of my Mother's little Family was now employed in fitting me out for my Expedition; and as my Friend had been ſo inſtrumental in bringing it about, he never miſſed a Day enquiring how Preparations went on, and during the Proceſs, by humouring me, ingratiated himſelf more and more with my Mother; but without ſeeming in the leaſt to aim at it.

In ſhort, the Hour of my Departure arrived; and tho' I had never been Maſter of above Sixpence

pence at one Time, unless at a Fair, or so, for immediate spending, my Mother, thinking to make my Heart easy at our Separation, which had it appeared otherwise, would have broke hers, and spoiled all, gave me a double Pistole in Gold, and a little Silver in my Pocket to prevent my changing it.

Thus I, the Coach waiting for us at the Door, having been preached into a good liking of the Scheme by my Friend, who now insisted upon making one of our Company to introduce us, mounted the Carriage with more Alacrity than could be expected for one who had never before been beyond the Smoak of his Mother's Chimney; but the Thoughts I had conceived, from my Friend's Discourse, of Liberty in the Academick Way, and the Weight of so much Money in my Pocket, as I then imagined would scarce ever be exhausted, were prevailing Cordials to keep my Spirits on the Wing. We lay at an Inn that Night, near the Master's House, and the next Day I was initiated; and, at parting with me, my Friend presented me with a Guinea. When I found myself thus rich, I must say, I heartily wished they were all fairly at home again; that I might have Time to count my Cash, and dispose of such Part of it as I had already appropriated to several Uses then in Embryo.

The next Morning left me Master of my Wishes: For my Mother came and took her last (tho' she little thought it) Leave of me, and smothering me with her Caresses and Prayers for my well-doing, in the Heighth of her Ardour, put into my Hand another Guinea, promising to see me again quickly; and desiring me, in the mean time, to be a very good Husband, which

I have ſince taken to be a Sort of prophetick Speech, She bid me farewel.

I ſhall not trouble you with the Reception I met from my Maſter, or his Scholars; or tell you, how ſoon I made Friends of all my Companions, by ſome trifling Largeſſes which my Stock enabled me to beſtow, as occaſion required; but I muſt inform you, that after ſixteen Years of Idleneſs at Home, I had but little Heart to my Nouns and Pronouns, which now began to be crammed upon me; and being the eldeſt Lad in the Houſe, I ſometimes regretted the Loſs of the Time paſt, and at other times deſpaired of ever making a Scholar, at my Years; and was aſhamed to ſtand like a great Lubber, declining of *Hæc Mulier*, a Woman, whilſt my School-fellows, and Juniors by five Years, were engaged in the Love Stories of *Ovid*, or the luſcious Songs of *Horace*: I own theſe Thoughts almoſt overcame me, and threw me into a deep melancholy, of which I ſoon after by Letter informed my Mother; who, (by the Advice as I ſuppoſe of my Friend, by this Time her Suitor) ſent me Word to mind my Studies, and I ſhould want for nothing.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

How he spent his Time at the Academy; an Intrigue with a Servant-Maid there; she declares herself with Child by him; her Expostulations to him; he is put to it for Money; refused it from Home, by his Friend, who had married his Mother; is drawn in to marry the Maid; she lies-in at her Aunt's; returns to her Service; he has another Child by her.

I Had now been passing my Time for about three Months, in this melancholy Way; and you may imagine, under that Disadvantage, had made but little Progress in my Learning; when one of our Maids, taking Notice one Day of my Uneasiness, as I sat musing in my Chamber, according to my Custom, began to rally me, that I was certainly in Love, I was so sad. Indeed, I never had a Thought of Love before; but the good-natur'd Girl, seeming to pity me, and seriously asking me the Cause, I fairly open'd my Heart to her; and for fear my Master should know it, gave her half a Crown to be silent. This last Engagement fixed her my Devotee, and from that Time, we had frequent Conferences, in Confidence together; till at length, Inclination, framed by Opportunity, produced the Date of a World of Concern to me; for, about six Months after my Arrival at the Academy, instead of proving my Parts by my Scholarship, I had proved my Manhood, by being the destined Father of an Infant, which my female Correspondent then assured me would soon be my own.

We nevertheless held on our frequent Intercourse; nor was I so alarmed at the News, as I ought

ought to have been, till about two Months after, when *Patty* (for that was the only Name I then knew her by) explained herself to me, in the following Terms.—You know, Mr. *Peter*, how Matters are with me; I should be very sorry, for your Sake, and my own too, to reveal my Shame; but in Spite of us both, Nature will shew itself; and truly, I think, some Care should be taken, and some Method proposed, to preserve the Infant, and avoid, as far as may be, the Inconveniencies that may attend us; for, here is now no Room for Delay.—This Speech, I own, gave me the first Reflection I ever had in my Life, and lock'd up all my Faculties for a long Time; nor was I able, for the Variety of Ideas that crowded my Brain, to make a Word of Answer, but stood like an Image of Stone; till *Patty*, seeing my Confusion, desired me to recollect my Reason, for as it was too late to undo what had been done, it remained now only to act with that Prudence, and Caution, which the Nature of the Case required; and that, for her Part, she would concur in every reasonable Measure I should approve of; but, I must remember, she was only a Servant, and had very little due to her for Wages, and not a Penny besides that; and, that there must necessarily be a Preparation made for the Reception of the Infant, when Time should produce it.—I now began to see the absolute Necessity of all she said; but, how to accomplish it, was not in me to comprehend.—My own small Matter of Money was gone, and had been so a long Time; we therefore agreed, I should write to my Mother for a fresh Supply; I did so, and to my great Confusion, was answered by my former Friend, in the following Words.

Son

Son PETER,

YOUR Mother and I are much surprised you should write for Money, having so amply provided for you; but as it is not many Months to *Christmas*, when possibly we may send for you Home, you must make yourself easy till then; as a School-boy, with all Necessaries found him, can't have much Occasion for Money. Your loving Father, *J. G.*

Imagine, if it is possible, my Consternation at the Receipt of this Letter. I began to think, I should be tricked out of what my Father and Grandfather had, with so much Pains and Industry, for many Years been heaping up for me; and had a thousand Thoughts altogether, justling out each other; so could resolve on nothing. I then shewed *Patty* the Letter, and we both condoled my hard Fortune, but saw no Remedy. Time wore away, and nothing done, or like to be, as I could see.—For my Part, I was like one distracted, and no more able to assist, or counsel what should be done, than a Child in Arms. At length poor *Patty*, who had sat thinking some Time, began, with telling me, she had formed a Scheme, which in some Measure might help us; but, fearing it might be disagreeable to me, she durst not mention it, till I should assure her, whatever I thought of That, I would think no worse of her, for proposing it.—This preparatory Introduction, startled me a great deal; for it darted into my Head, she waited for my Concurrence to destroy the Child; to which, I could never have consented. But, upon my assuring her, that I would not think the worse of her, for whatever she should propose, but freely give her my Opinion upon it; she told me, as she could

see

ſee no other Way before us, but what tended to our Diſgrace and Ruin, if I would marry her, ſhe would immediately quit her Place, and retire to her Aunt, who had brought her up from a Child, and had enough, prettily to live upon; who ſhe did not doubt, would entertain her as my Wife, but ſhe was aſſured, upon any other Score, or under any other Name, would prove her moſt inveterate Enemy.—When *Patty* had made an end, I was glad to find it no worſe, and revolving Matters a little in my Mind, both as to Affairs at home, and the requeſted Marriage, I concluded upon this latter, and had a great Inclination to acquaint my Mother of it; but was diverted from that, by ſuſpecting it might prove a good Handle for my new Father, to work with my Mother ſome Miſchief againſt me; ſo determined to marry forthwith, ſend *Patty* to her Aunt's, and remain ſtill at the Academy myſelf, till I ſhould ſee what turn Things would take at Home. Accordingly, the next Day, good Part of *Patty*'s Wages went to tie the Connubial Knot, and to the honeſt Parſon for a Bribe to ante-date the Certificate; and ſhe very ſoon after took up the reſt, to defray her Journey to her Aunt's.

Though *Patty* was within two Months of her Time, ſhe had ſo managed, that no one perceived it; and, getting ſafe to her Aunt's, was delivered of a Daughter, of which ſhe wrote me Word, and ſaid, ſhe hoped to ſee me at the End of her Month. How, think I, can ſhe expect to ſee me, Money I have none; and then, I deſpaired of Leave for a Journey, if I had it; and to go without Leave, would only arm *J. C.* againſt me, as I perceived plainly his Intereſt and mine were very remote Things;

ſo

so I resolved to quit all Thoughts of a Journey, and wait till Opportunity better served, for seeing my Wife and Child, and our good Aunt, to whom we were so much obliged.——While these and such like Cogitations engrossed my whole Attention, I was most pleasingly surprised one Day, upon my return from a musing Walk, by the River Side, at the End of our Garden, where I frequently got my Tasks, to find *Patty* sitting in the Kitchen, with my old Mistress, my Master's Mother, who managed his House, he having been a Widower many Years. The Sight of her almost overcame me, as I had bolted into the Kitchen, and was seen by my old Mistress, before I had seen *Patty* was with her. The old Lady perceiving me discomposed, inquired into the Cause, which I directly imputed to the Symptoms of an Ague, that, I told her, I had felt upon me best Part of the Morning. She, a good motherly Woman, feeling my Pulse, and satisfying herself of its Disorder, immediately ran to her Closet to bring me a Cordial, which she assured me had done Wonders in the like Cases; so that I had but just Time to embrace *Patty*, and enquire after our Aunt and Daughter, before Madam returned with the Cordial. Having drank it, and given Thanks, I was going to withdraw, but she would not part with me so; for nothing less than my Knowledge, that this Cordial was of her own making, from whence she had the Receipt, and an exact Catalogue of the several Cures it had done, would serve her Turn; which, taking up full three Quarters of an Hour, gave room to *Patty* and me, to enjoy each others Glances for that Time, to our mutual Satisfaction. At last, the old Prattlebox having made a short Pause, to recover Breath, from the Narra-

tive

tive of the Cordial; Mr. *Peter*, says she, you look as if you did not know poor *Patty*; she has not left me so long that you should forget her; she is a good right Wench, and I was sorry to part with her; but she is out of Place, she says, and as that dirty Creature *Nan* is gone, I think to take her again. I told her, I well knew she was Judge of a good Servant, and I did not doubt *Patty* was such, if she thought so; and then I made my Exit, lighter in Heart by a Pound than I came.

I shall not tire you any farther with the Amours between self and *Patty*; but to let you know, she quitted her Place again, seven Months after, upon the same Score.

CHAP. III.

Minds his Studies; informs his Master of his Mother's Marriage, and Usage of him; hears of her Death; makes his Master his Guardian; goes with him to take Possession of his Estate; is informed all is given to his Father-in-Law; Moral Reflections on his Condition, and on his Father's Crimes.

I Was now near nineteen Years of Age; and though I had so much more in my Head, than my School-Learning, I know not how it happened, but ever since the Commencement of my Amour with *Patty*, having somebody to disburthen my Mind to, and to participate in my Concerns, I had been much easier, and had kept truc tally with my Book, with more than usual Delight; and being arrived to an Age, to comprehend what I heard and read, I could, from the general Idea I had of Things, form a

pretty

pretty regular Piece of *Latin*, without being able to repeat the very Rules it was done by; so that I had the Acknowledgment of my Master, for the best Capacity he ever had under his Tuition: This, he not sparing frequently to mention it before me, was the acutest Spur he could have applied to my Industry; and now, having his good Will, I began to disuse set Hours of Exercise, but at my Conveniency applied myself to my Studies, as I best pleased, being always sure to perform as much, or more, than he ever enjoined me; till I grew exceedingly in his Confidence, and by Reason of my Age (though I was but small, yet manly) I became rather his Companion upon Parties, than his direct Pupil.

It was upon one of these Parties, I took the Opportunity to declare the Dissatisfaction I had at my Mother's second Marriage. Sir, says I, surely I was of Age to have known it first, especially, considering the Affection my Mother had always shewn to me, and my never once having done the least Thing to disoblige her; but, Sir, said I, something else I fear is intended, by my Mother's Silence to me; for I have never received above three Letters from her, since I came here, which is now you know, three Years; and those were within the first three Months. I then shewed him the forementioned Letter I received from my new Father-in-Law, and assured him, that he gave me the first Hint of this second Marriage.

I found, by the Attention my Master gave to my relation, he seemed to suspect this Marriage would prove detrimental to me; but not, on the sudden, knowing what to say to it, he told me, he would consider of it; and, by all Means, advised me to write a very obliging Letter to

my new Father, with my humble Request, that he would please to order me home the next Recess of our Learning. I did so, under my Master's Dictation; and not long after received an Answer to the following Effect.

Son PETER,

YOUR Mother has been dead a good While; and as to your Request, it will be only expensive, and of little Use; for a Person who must live by his Studies, can't apply to them too closely.

This Letter, if I had a little hope left, quite subdued my Fortitude, and well nigh reduced me to Clay. However, with Tears in my Eyes, I shewed it to my Master; who, good Man, wishing me well; *Peter*, says he, what can this mean, here is some Mystery concealed in it; here is some ill Design on Foot; then, taking the Letter into his Hand, a Person who must live by his Studies, says he, here is more meant than we can think for. Why? Have not you a pretty Estate to live upon, when it comes to your Hands? *Peter*, says he, I would advise you to go to your Father, and inquire how your Affairs are left; but I am afraid to let you go alone, and will, when my Students depart at *Christmas*, accompany you myself, with all my Heart; for, you must know, I have advised on your Affair already, and find, you are of Age to chuse yourself a Guardian, who may be any Relation, or Friend you can confide in; and may see you have Justice done you. I immediately thanked him for the Hint, and begged him to accept of the Trust, as my only Friend, having very few, if any near Relations; this, he with

with great Readiness complied with, and was admitted accordingly.

So soon as our Scholars were gone home, my Master lending me a Horse, we set out together, to possess ourselves of all my Father's real Estate, and such Part of the personal as he had been advised would belong to me. Well, we arrived at the old House, but were not received with such extraordinary Tokens of Friendship, as would give the least Room to suppose we were welcome. For my Part, all I said, or could say, was, that I was very sorry for my Mother's Death. My Father replied, so was he. Here we paused, and might have sat silent till this Time for me, if my Master, a grave Man, who had seen the World, and was unwilling any Part of our Time there, which he guessed would be short, should be lost, had not broke Silence. Mr. *G.* says he, I see the Loss of Master *Wilkins*'s Mother puts him under some Confusion; so that you will excuse me, as his Preceptor, and Friend, in making some Inquiry, how his Affairs stand, and how his Effects are disposed; as I don't doubt, you have taken care to schedule every Thing that will be coming to him; and though he is not yet of the necessary Age, for taking upon himself the Management of his Estate, he is nevertheless of Capacity to understand the Nature, and *Quantum* of it, and, to shew his Approbation of the Disposition of it, as if he was a Year or two older.——During this Discourse, Mr. *G.* turned pale, then reddened, was going to interrupt, then checked himself; but however, kept Silence, till my Master had done; when, with a Sneer, he replied, Sir, I must own myself a great Stranger to your Discourse; nor can I, for my Life, imagine,

what your Harangue tends to; but sure I am, I know of no Estate, real, or personal, or any thing else belonging to young Mr. *Wilkins*, to make a Schedule of, as you call it: But this I know, his Mother had an Estate in Land, near two hundred a Year, and also a good Sum of Money, when I married her; but the Estate, she settled on me before her Marriage, to dispose of after her Decease, as I saw fit; and her Money and Goods are all come to my sole Use, as her Husband.——I was just ready to drop, while Mr. *G.* gave this Relation, and was not able to reply a Word; but my Master, though sufficiently shocked at what he had heard, replied; Sir, I am informed the Estate, and also the Money you mention, was Mr. *Wilkins*'s Father's at his Death; and I am surprized to think any one should have a better Title to them, than my Pupil, his only Child. Sir, says Mr. *G.* you are deceived, and tho' what you say seems plausible enough, and is in some Part true, as that the late Mr. *Wilkins* had such Estate, and some hundreds, I may say thousands, at his Death, yet you seem ignorant that he made a Deed just before entering into the fatal Rebellion, by which he gave my late Wife both the Estate, Money, and every thing else he had, absolutely, without any Conditions whatsoever; all which, on his unhappy Execution, she enjoyed, and now of Right, as I told you before, belongs to me; however, as I have no Child, if *Peter* behaves well under your Direction, I have Thoughts of paying another Year's Board for him, and then he must shift for himself.

Oh! cried I, for the Mercy of some savage Beast to devour me! Is this what I have been cocker'd up for! Why was I not placed out to

ſome laborious Craft, where I might have drudged for Bread in my proper Station! But, I fear, it is too late to inquire into what is paſt, and muſt ſubmit.

My Maſter (good Man) was thunderſtruck at what he had heard; and finding our Buſineſs done there, we took our Leaves, after Mr. *G.* had again repeated, that if I behaved well, my Preceptor ſhould keep me another Year; which was all I muſt expect from him; and at my Departure, he gave me a Crown Piece, which I then durſt not refuſe, for fear of offending my Maſter.

We made the beſt of our Way Home again to my Tutor's, where I ſtayed but a Week, to conſider what I ſhould do with myſelf. In this Time he did all he could to comfort me, telling me, if I would ſtay with him and become his Uſher, he would compleat my Learning for nothing, and allow me a Salary for my Trouble. But my Heart was too lofty to think of becoming an Uſher, within ſo little a Way from mine own Eſtate in other Hands. However, ſince I had not a Penny of Money to endeavour at recovering my Right with, I told my Maſter I would conſider of his Propoſal.

During my Stay with him, he uſed all Methods to make me as eaſy as poſſible; and frequently moraliz'd with ſo much Effect, that I was almoſt convinced I ought to ſubmit, and be content. Amongſt the reſt of his Diſcourſe, he endeavoured to ſhew me one Day, after I had been loudly condemning my cruel Fortune, and ſaying I was born to be unhappy, that I was miſtaken, if I thought, or imagined, it was Chance or Accident that had been againſt me, when I complained of Fortune; for, ſays he, *Peter*, there is nothing done below, but is at leaſt fore-known if

not decreed above; and our Business in Life is to believe so: Not that I would have such Belief make us careless, and think it to no Purpose to strive, as some do; who being persuaded that our Actions are not in our own Choice, but that, being pressed by an irresistible Decree, we are forced to act this or that, fancy we must be necessarily happy or miserable hereafter: Or, as others, who, for fear of falling upon that shocking Principle, would even deprive the Almighty of Fore-knowledge, lest it should consequentially amount to a Decree; for (say they) what is fore-known, will, and must be: But I would have you act so, as that, let either of these Tenets be true, you may still be sure of making yourself easy and happy: And for that Purpose let me recommend to you a uniform Life of Justice and Piety; always choosing the good rather than the bad Side of every Action; for this, say they what they will to the contrary, is not above the Power of a reasonable Being to practise; and doing so, you may without Scruple say, If there is Fore-knowledge of my Actions, or they are decreed, I then am one who is fore-known or decreed to be happy: And this, without further Speculation, you will find the only Means always to keep you so; for all Men, of all Denominations, fully allow this happy Effect to follow good Actions. Again, *Peter*, a Person acting in a vicious Course, with such an Opinion in his Head as above, must surely be very miserable, as his very Actions themselves must pronounce the Decree against him: Whilst therefore we have not heard the Decree read, you see, we may easily give Sentence whether it be for Good or Evil to us, by the Tenour and Course of our own Actions.

You

You are not now to learn, *Peter*, that the Crimes of the Father are often punished in the Children, often in the Father himself, sometimes in both, and not seldom in neither, in this Life; and tho', at first, one should think the future Punishment, annexed to bad Actions, was sufficient, still it is necessary some should suffer here also for an Example to others; we being much more affected with what the Eye sees, than what the Heart only meditates upon.

Now, to bring it to our own Case; your Father, *Peter*, rose against the lawful Magistrate, to deprive him (it matters not that he was a bad one) of his lawful Power. Your Father's Policy was such, and his Design so well laid, as he thought, that upon any ill Success to himself, he had secured his Estate to go in the Way of all others he could wish to have it, and sits down very well contented, that, happen what would, he should bite the Government, in preventing the Forfeiture. But lo his Policy is as a Wall of Sand blown down with a Puff! for it is to you it ought, even himself being Umpire, to have come, as no one would think, he could prize any before you his own Child. Now, could he look from the Grave, and know what passes here, and see Mr. *G.* in Possession of all he fancied he had secured for you, what a weak and short-sighted Creature would he find himself. If it be said, he did not know he should have a Child, then herein appears God's Policy beyond Man's; for he knew it, and has so ordered, that that Child should be disinherited; for, by the way, *Peter*, take this for a Maxim, wherever the first Principle of an Action is ill, no good Consequence can possibly ever be an Attendant on it. Could he, as I said before, but look up and see you,

his only Child, undone, by the very Instrument he designed for your Security, how pungent would be his Anxiety. I say, *Peter*, tho' there is something so unaccountable, to human Wisdom, in such Events of Things, yet there is something therein so reasonable and just withal, that by a prying Eye, the Supreme Hand may very visibly be seen in them. Now this being plainly the Case before us, and herein the Glory of the Almighty exalted, rest content under it, and let not this Disappointment, befallen you for your Father's Faults, be attended with others sent down for your own; but remember this, the Hand that depresses a Man, is no less able to exalt and establish him.

CHAP. IV.

Departs secretly from his Master; travels to Bristol; *religious Thoughts by the Way; enters on Shipboard, and is made Captain's Steward.*

I Seemed to be very well satisfied whilst my Master was speaking; but tho' I thought he talked like an Angel, my former Uneasiness seized me at parting with him. In short, without more Consideration, I rose in the Morning early and marched off; having first wrote to my Wife, at her Aunt's, relating the State of the Case to her, with my Resolution to leave *England*, the first Opportunity; giving her what Comfort I could, assuring her, if I ever was a Gainer in Life, she should not fail to be a Partaker, and promising also to let her know where I settled. I walked at a great Rate, for fear my Master's Kindness should prompt him to send after me; and taking the

the By-ways, I reached by dark Night a little Village, where I resolved to halt. Upon Inquiry, I found myself Thirty-five Miles from my Master's.——I had eaten nothing all Day, and was very hungry and weary, but my Crown Piece was as yet whole; however I fed very sparingly, being over-pressed with the Distress of my Affairs and the Confusion of my Thoughts.—I slept that Night tolerably; but the Morning brought its Face of Horror with it. I had inquired over Night where I was, and been informed that I was not above sixteen Miles from *Bristol*, for which Place I then resolved.—At my setting out in the Morning, after I had walked about three Miles, and had recollected a little my Master's last Discourse, I found by Degrees my Spirit grew calmer, than it had been since I left Mr. *G.* at my House, (as I shall ever call it;) and looking into myself for the Cause, found another Set of Thoughts were preparing a Passage into my Mind, which did not carry half the Dread and Terror with them that their Predecessors had; for I began to cast aside the Difficulties and Apprehensions I before felt in my Way, and, encouraging the present Motions, soon became sensible of the Benefit of a virtuous Education; and tho' what I had hitherto done in the immediate Service of God, I must own, had been performed from Force, Custom, and Habit, and without the least Attention to the Object of the Duty; yet, as under my Mother at Home, and my Master at the Academy, I had been always used to say my Prayers, as they called it, Morning and Night; I began with a Sort of superstitious Reflection, to accuse myself of having omitted that Duty the Night before, and also, at my setting out in the Morning, and very much to blame

myſelf for it; and at the ſame Inſtant, even wondred at myſelf for that Blame.——What, ſays I, is the real Uſe of this praying? and to whom or to what do we pray? I ſee no one to pray to, neither have I ever thought that my Prayers would be anſwered. 'Tis true, they are worded as if we prayed to God: but he is in Heaven, does he concern himſelf with us, who can do him no Service? Can I think all my Prayers that I have ſaid, from Day to Day, ſo many Years, have been heard by him? No ſure; if they had, I ſhould ſcarce have ſuſtained this hard Fate in my Fortune. But hold, how have I prayed to him? Have I as earneſtly prayed to him, as I uſed to petition my Mother for any thing when I wanted it againſt her Inclination? No, I can't ſay I have. And would my Mother have granted me ſuch Things, if ſhe had not thought, I from my Heart deſired them, when I uſed to be ſo earneſt with her? No ſurely, I can't ſay ſhe had any Reaſon for it. But I had her indeed before me; now I have not God in my View, he is in Heaven: Yet, let me ſee, my Maſter, (and I can't help thinking he muſt know,) uſed to ſay, that God is a Spirit, and not confined by the Incumbrance of a Body, as we are; now, if it is ſo, why may not he virtually be preſent with me, though I don't perceive him? Why may he not be at once in Heaven and elſewhere? For, if he conſiſts not of Parts, nothing can circumſcribe him. And truly, I believe it muſt be ſo; for if he is of that ſupreme Power as he is repreſented, he could never act in ſo unconfined a Capacity, under the Reſtraint of Place; but if he is an operative and purely ſpiritual Being, then I can ſee no Reaſon, why his virtual Eſſence ſhould not be diffuſed

through

through all Nature; and then, which I begin to think most likely, why should not I suppose him ever present with me, and able to hear me? And why should not I, when I pray, have a full Idea of the Being, tho' not of any corporeal Parts or Form, of God; and so have actually somewhat to be intent upon in my Prayers? and not do as I have hitherto done, say so many Words only upon my Knees; which I can't help thinking, may be as well without either Sense or Meaning in themselves, as without a proper Object in my Mind to direct them unto.

These Thoughts agitated me at least two Miles, working stronger and stronger in me; till at length, bursting into Tears, Have I been doing nothing, says I, in the Sight of God, under the Name of Prayers, for so many Years? Yet it is certainly so. Well, by the Grace of God, it shall be so no longer, I'll try somewhat more. So looking round about me, to see if I was quite alone, I stept into an adjoining Copse, and could scarce refrain falling on my Knees, till I came to a proper Place for kneeling in. I then poured forth my whole Soul and Spirit to God; and all my Strength, and every Member, every Faculty, was to the utmost employed, for a considerable Time, in that most agreeable as well as useful Duty. I would indeed have began with my accustomed Prayers, and had repeated some Words of them; when, as though against and contrary to my Design, I was carried away by such rapturous Effusions, that, to this Hour, when I reflect thereon, I can't believe, but I was moved to them by a much more than human Impulse. However, this Extasy did not last above a Quarter of an Hour; but it was considerably longer before my Spirits subsided to their usual Frame.

When

When I had a little composed myself, how was I altered, how did I condemn myself for all my past Disquiet! what calm Thanks did I return for the Ease and Satisfaction of Mind I then enjoyed! and coming to a small Rivulet, I drank an hearty Draught of Water, and contentedly proceeding on my Journey, I reached *Bristol* about four a Clock in the Afternoon. Having refreshed myself, I went the same Evening to the *Kay*, to inquire what Ships were in the River, whither bound, and when they would depart. My Business was with the Sailors, of whom there were at that Time great Numbers there; but I could meet with no Employ, though I gave out, I would gladly enter myself before the Mast.---- After I had done the best I could, but without Success, I returned to the little House I had dined at, and went to Bed very pensive. I did not forget my Prayers; but I could by no Means be roused to such Devotion as I felt in the Morning. Next Day I walked again to the *Kay*, asking all I met, who looked like Seafaring Men, for Employment; but could hear of none, there being many waiting for Births; and I feared, my Appearance (which was not so mean, as most of that Sort of Gentry's is) would prove no small Disappointment to my Preferment that Way. At last, being out of Heart with my frequent Repulses, I went to a landing Place just by, and as I asked some Sailors who were putting two Gentlemen on Shore, if they wanted a Hand on board their Ship, one of the Gentlemen, whom I afterwards found to be the Master of a Vessel bound to the Coast of *Africa*, turned back, and looking earnestly on me, young Man, says he, do you want Employment on board? I immediately made him a Bow, and answered, yes, Sir. Said he, there

is

is no talking in this Weather, for it then blew almost a Storm; but step into that Tavern, pointing to the Place, and I'll be with you presently.

I went thither, and not long after came my future Master. He asked me many Questions, but the first was, Whether I had been at Sea? I told him no; but I did not doubt soon to learn the Duty of a Sailor. He then looked on my Hand, and shaking his Head, told me it would not do, for I had too soft a Hand. I told him I was determined for the Sea, and that my Hand and Heart should go together; and I hoped my Hand would soon harden, though not my Heart. He then told me, it was pity to take such a pretty young Fellow before the Mast; but if I understood Accounts tolerably, and could write a good Hand, he would make me his Steward, and make it worth my while. I answered in the affirmative, joyfully accepting his Offer; but on his asking me where my Chest was, (for, says he, if the Wind had not been so strong against me, I had fallen down the River this Morning) I looked very blank, and plainly told him I had no other Stores than I carried on my Back. The Captain smiled. Says he, young Man, I see you are a Novice; why, the meanest Sailor in my Ship has a Chest, at least, and perhaps something in it; come, says he, my Lad, I like your Looks, be diligent and honest, I'll let you have a little Money to set you out, and deduct it in your Pay. He was then pulling out his Purse, when I begged him, as he seemed to shew me so great a Kindness, that he would order somebody to buy what Necessaries he knew I should want, for me, or I should be under as great a Difficulty to know what to get, and where to buy them. He commended my Prudence, and said he would buy

them and send them on board himself; so bid me trouble myself no more about them, but go to the Ship, in the return of his Boat, and stay there till he came; giving me a Ticket to the Boat's Crew to take me in. When I came to the Shore, the Boat was gone off, and at a good Distance; but I hailed them, and shewing my Ticket, they put back, and took me safe to the Ship; heartily glad that I was entered upon my new Service.

CHAP. V.

His first Entertainment on board; sets sail; his Sickness; Engagement with a French *Privateer; is taken and laid in Irons. Twenty-one Prisoners turned adrift in a small Boat with only two Days Provision.*

BEING once on board, and in Pay, I thought I was a happy Man, and set about considering how to behave myself; and no body knowing, as yet, upon what footing I came on board, they took me for a Passenger, as my Dress did not at all bespeak me a Sailor; so every one, as I sauntered about, had something to say to me. By and by comes a pert young Fellow up, Sir, says he, your Servant; what, I see, our Captain has picked up a Passenger at last. Passenger, says I, you are pleased to be merry, Sir, I am no Passenger. Why, pray, says he, what may you be then? Sir, says I, the Captain's Steward. You impertinent Puppy, says he, what an Answer you give me; you the Captain's Steward? No, Sir, that Place, I can assure you, is in better Hands, and away he turned.—I knew not what to think

of

of it, but was terribly afraid I ſhould draw myſelf into ſome Scrape. By and by, others aſked me, ſome one thing, ſome another, and I was very cautious what Anſwers I made them, for fear of Offence; till a grave Sailor came and ſat down by me, and, after talking of the Weather, and other indifferent Matters, pray, ſays I, Sir, who is that Gentleman that was ſo affronted at me ſoon after I came on board? Oh, ſays he, a proud inſignificant Fellow, the Captain's Steward; but don't mind him, ſays he, he uſes the Captain himſelf as bad; they have had high Words juſt before the Captain went on Shore; and had he uſed me, as he did him, I ſhould have made no Ceremony of tipping him over-board, a Raſcal. Says I, you ſurprize me, for the Captain ſent me on board to be his Steward, and agreed with me about it this Afternoon. Huſh, ſays he, I ſee how it will go; the Captain, if that's the Caſe, will diſcharge him when he comes on board; and indeed, I believe, he would not have kept him ſo long, but we have waited for a Wind, and he could not provide himſelf.

The Captain came on board at Night; and the firſt thing he did, was to demand the Keys of Mr. Steward, which he gave to me, and ordered him on Shore.

The next Morning the Captain went on Shore himſelf; but the Wind chopping about, and ſtanding fair about Noon, he returned then with my Cheſt, and before Night we were got into ſailing Order, and before the Wind, with a briſk Gale.

What happened the firſt fourteen Days of our Paſſage I know not, having been all that Time ſo ſick and weak, I could ſcarcely keep Life and Soul together; but after grew better and better.

We

We prosecuted our Voyage, touching, for about a Week, at the *Madeiras* in our Way. The Captain grew very fond of me, and never put me to hard Duty, and I passed my Time (under his Favour) very pleasantly. One Evening, being within sixty Leagues of the Cape of *Palmes*, calm Weather, but the little Wind we had against us, one of our Men spied a Sail, and gave the Captain notice of it. He not suspecting Danger, minded it little; and we made what Way the Wind would permit; but, Night coming on, and the Calm continuing, about peep of Day, we perceived we were infallibly fallen in with a *French* Privateer; who, hoisting *French* Colours, called out to us to strike. Our Captain had scarce Time to consider what to do, they were so near us; but as he had twenty-two Men on board, and eight Guns, he could bring to; so he called all Hands on Deck, and telling them the Consequence of a Surrender, asked them if they would stand by him. One and all swore, they would fight the Ship to the Bottom, rather than fall into the Privateer's Hands.——The Captain immediately gave the Word for a clear Deck, prepared his Fire-arms, and begged them to be active and obey Orders; and perceiving the Privateer out numbered our Hands by abundance, he commanded all the small Arms to be brought upon Deck loaded, and to run out as many of the Ship's Guns as she could bring to on one Side; and to charge them all with small Shot; then stand to till he gave Directions.—The Privateer being a light Ship, and a small Breeze arising, run up close to us; first firing one Gun, then another, still calling out to us to strike; but we neither returned Fire nor Answer, till he came almost within Pistol shot of us, and seeing us a small Vessel, thought to board us directly; but

but then our Captain ordered a broad Side, and immediately all Hands to come on Deck; himself standing there at the Time of our first Fire with his Fusee in his Hand, and near him I stood with another. We killed eight Men and wounded several others. The Privateer then fired a broad Side through and through us. By this Time our Hands were all on Deck, and the Privateer pushing in hopes to grapple and board us, we gave them a Volley from thence, that did good Execution; and then all Hands to the Ship's Guns again, except four, who were left along with me to charge the small Arms. It is incredible how soon they had fired the great Guns, and were on Deck again. This last Fire, being with Ball, raked the Privateer miserably. Then we fired the small Arms, and away to the Ship's Guns. This we did three Times successively without Loss of a Man; and I believe if we could have held it once more, and no Assistance had come to the Privateer, she had sheered quite off. But our Captain spying a Sail at some Distance behind the Privateer, who lay to Windward of us, and seeing by his Glass it was a *Frenchman*, was almost dismayed; the same Sight put Courage into our Enemies, who thereupon redoubled the Attack; and, the first Volley of their small Arms, shot our Captain in the Breast, upon which he dropped dead without stirring. I need not say, that Sight shocked me exceedingly. Indeed, it disconcerted the whole Action; and though our Mate, a Man of good Courage and Experience, did all that a brave Man could do to animate the Men, they apparently drooped, and the Loss of the Ship became inevitable; so we struck, and the *Frenchman* boarded us.

During

During the latter Part of the Engagement, we had two Men killed, and five wounded, who died afterwards of their Wounds. We, who were alive, were all ordered on board the *Frenchman*, who, after rifling us, chained us two and two, and turned us into the Hold. Our Vessel was then ransacked; and the other Privateer, who had suffered much the Day before, in an Engagement with an *English* twenty-gun Ship of War, coming up, the Prize was sent by her into Port, where she herself was to refit.

In this Condition did I, and fourteen of our Crew, lie for six Weeks; till the Fetters on our Legs had almost eaten to the Bone, and the Stench of the Place had well nigh suffocated us.

The *Glorieux*, for that was the Name of the Privateer who took us, saw nothing further in five Weeks worth her Notice, which very much discouraged the Men; and consulting together, it was agreed, to cruise more Northward, between *Sierra Leon* and *Cape de Verd*; but, about Noon, next Day, they spied a Sail, coming West North West, with a fresh Gale. The Captain thereupon ordered all to be ready, and lie by for her. But, though she discerned us, she kept her Way, bearing only more Southward; when the Wind shifting to North-East, she ran for it, full before the Wind, and we after her with all the sail we could crowd; and though she was a very good Sailer, we gained upon her, being laden, and before Night, came pretty well up with her; but, being a large Ship, and the Evening haizy, we did not chuse to engage her till Morning. The next Morning we found she was sunk away; but we fetched her up, and, hoisting *French* Colours, fired a Shot; which she not answering, our Captain run along Side of her,

her, and fired a broad Side; then slackening upon her, a hard Engagement ensued; the Shot thumping so against our Ship, that we Prisoners, who had nothing to do in the Action, expected Death, one or other of us, every Moment. The Merchant Man was so heavy loaded, and drew so much Water, that she was very unwieldy in Action; so after a Fight of two Hours, when most of her Rigging and Masts were cut, and wounded, she struck. Twelve Men were sent on Board her, and her Captain and several Officers were ordered on Board us.

There were thirty-eight Persons in her, including Passengers: all of whom, except five, and the like Number which had been killed in the Action, were sent chained into the Hold to us, who had lain there almost six Weeks. This Prize put Monsieur into good Heart, and determined him to return Home with her. But in two Days Time, his new Acquisition was found to have leaked so fast near the Bottom, that before they were aware of it, the Water was risen some Feet. Several Hands were employed to find out the Leak; but all asserted it was too low to be come at; and as the Pumps, with all the Labour the Prisoners, who were the Persons put to it, could use, would not reduce it, but it still increased, they removed what Goods they could into the Privateer; and before they could unload it, the Prize sunk.

The next Thing they consulted upon, was, what to do with the Prisoners, who, by the Loss of the Prize, were now grown too numerous to be trusted in the Privateer; fearing too, as they were now so far out at Sea, by the great Addition of Mouths, they might soon be brought to short Allowance; it was (on both Accounts) resolved,

resolved, to give us the Prize's Boat, which they had saved, and turn us adrift to shift for ourselves. There were in all forty-three of us; but the Privateer having lost several of their own Men in the two Engagements, they looked us over, and picking out two and twenty of us, who were the most likely Fellows for their Purpose, the remaining one and twenty were committed to the Boat, with about two Days Provision and a small Matter of Ammunition, and turned out.

CHAP. VI.

The Boat, two hundred Leagues from Land, makes no Way, but drives more to S a by the Wind; the People live nine Days at quarter Allowance; four die with Hunger the twelfth Day; five more the fourteenth Day; on the fifteenth they eat one just dead; want of Water excessive; spy a Sail; are taken up; work their Passage to the African Shore; are sent on a secret Expedition; are Way-laid, taken Slaves, and sent up the Country.

WHEN we, who were in the Boat, came to reflect on our Condition, the Prospect before us appeared very melancholy; tho' we had at first readily enough embraced the Offer, rather than perish in so much Misery, as we suffered in our loathsome Confinement. We now judged we were above two hundred Leagues from Land, in about eight Degrees North Latitude; and blowing North-East, a pretty stiff Gale, we could make no Way, but rather lost, for we aimed at some Port in *Africa*, having neither Sail, Compass, nor any other Instrument to direct us; so that all the Observation we could make was by the

the Sun for running Southward, or as the Wind carried us, for we had lost the North-Pole.—As we had little above two Days Provisions, we perceived a Necessity of almost starving, voluntarily, to avoid doing it quite; seeing it must be many Days before we could reach shore, if even we did, having visibly driven a great deal more Southward than we were; nay, unless a sudden Change happened, we were sure of perishing, unless delivered by some Ship that Providence might send in our Way.—In short, the ninth Day came, but no Relief with it; and though we had lived at quarter Allowance, and but just saved Life, our Food, except a little Water, was all gone, and this caused us quite to despair. On the twelfth Day four of our Company died with Hunger, in a very miserable Way; and yet the Survivors had not Strength left to move them to pity their Fellows. In truth we had sat still, attempting nothing in several Days; as we found that unless the Wind shifted, we only consumed the little Strength we had left, to no Manner of Purpose.—On the fourteenth day, and in the Night, five more died, and a sixth was near expiring; and yet, we, the Survivors, were so indolent, we would scarce lend a Hand to throw them over-board.—On the fifteenth day in the Morning, our Carpenter, weak as he was, started up, and as the sixth Man was just dead, cut his Throat, and, whilst warm, would let out what Blood would flow; then, pulling off his old Jacket, invited us to Dinner, and cutting a large Slice off the Corpse, devoured it with as much seeming Relish, as if it had been Ox Beef. His Example prevailed with the rest of us, one after another, to taste and eat; and as there had been a heavy Dew or Rain in the Night, and we had

spread

spread out every Thing we had of Linen and Woolen to receive it, we were a little refreshed by wringing our Cloaths, and sipping what came from them; after which we covered them up from the Sun, throwing them all close together to keep in the Moisture, which served us to suck at for two Days after, a little and a little at a Time; for now we were in greater Distress for Water, than for Meat. — It has surprised me many Times since, to think how we could make so light a Thing of eating our Fellow-Creature just dead before our Eyes; but, I'll assure you, when we had once tasted, we looked on the Blessing to be so great, that we cut and eat, with as little Remorse, as we should have had for feeding on the best Meat in an *English* Market. And most certainly, when this Corpse had failed, if another had not dropped by fair Means, we should have used foul, by murdering one of our Number as a Supply for the rest.

Water, as I said before, to moisten our Mouths, was now our greatest Hardship, for every Man had so often drank his own, that we voided scarce any Thing but Blood, and that but a few Drops at a Time; our Mouths and Tongues were quite stead with Drought, and our Teeth just falling from our Jaws; for, though we had tryed, by placing all the dead Men's Jackets and Shirts one over another, to strain some of the Sea-Water through 'em by small Quantities, yet that would not deprive it of its pernicious Qualities; and though it refreshed a little in going down, we were so sick, and strained ourselves so much after it, that it came up again, and made us more miserable than before. — Our Corpse now stunk so, what was left of it, that we could no longer bear it on Board, and every Man began

to

to look with an evil Eye on his Fellow, to think whose Turn it would be next; for the Carpenter had started the Question, and preached us into the Necessity of it; and we had agreed, the next Morning, to put it to the Lot, who should be the Sacrifice.—In this Distress of Thought, it was so ordered, by good Providence, that, on the 21st Day, we thought we spied a Sail coming from the North-west, which caused us to delay our Lots, till we should see whether it would discover us or not; we hung up some Jackets upon our Oars to be seen as far off as we could, but had so little Strength left, we could make no Way towards it; however, it happened to direct its Course so much to our Relief, that, an Hour before Sun-set, it was within a League of us, but seemed to bear away more Eastward, and our Fear was, that they should not know our Distress, for we were not able to make any Noise from our Throats, that might be heard fifty Yards; but the Carpenter, who was still the best Man amongst us, with much ado, getting one of the Guns to go off, in less than half an Hour she came up with us, and, seeing our deplorable Condition, took us all on Board, to the Number of eleven. Tho' no Methods were unessayed for our Recovery, four more of us died in as many Days. When the remaining seven of us came a little to ourselves, we found our Deliverers were *Portuguese*, bound for Saint *Salvadore*. We told the Captain, we begged he would let us work our Passage with him, be it where it would, to Shore; and then, if we could be of no further Service to him, we did not doubt getting into *Europe* again: But, in the Voyage, as we did him all the Service in our Power, we pleased him so well, that he engaged us to stay with him, to work the

Ship

Ship home again, he having lost some Hands by Fevers soon after his setting Sail.

We arrived safe in Port; and, in a few Days, the Captain, who had a secret Enterprize to take in hand, hired a Country coasting Vessel, and sent her seventeen Leagues further on the Coast for Orders from some Factory or Settlement there: I was one of the nine Men who were destined to conduct her; but, not understanding *Portuguese*, I knew little of the Business we went upon. We were to coast it all the Way, but, on the tenth Day, just at Sun-rise, we fell in with a Fleet of Boats, which had way-laid us, and were taken Prisoners. Being carried ashore, we were conducted a long Way up the Country, where we were imprisoned, and almost starved: Tho' I never knew the Meaning of it; nor did any of us, unless the Mate, who, we heard, was carried up the Country, much further, to *Angola*; but we never heard more of him, tho' we were told he would be sent back to us.

Here we remained under Confinement almost three Months, at the End of which Time our Keeper told us we were to be removed; and coupling us two and two together, sent a Guard with us to *Angola*; when, crossing a large River, we were set to Work in removing the Rubbish and Stones of a Castle, or Fortress, which had been lately demolished by an Earthquake and Lightning. Here we continued about five Months, being very sparingly dieted, and locked up every Night.

This Place however I thought a Paradise to our former Dungeon; and as we were not overworked, we made our Lives comfortable enough, having the Air all Day to refresh us from the Heat, and not wanting for Company; For there

were,

were at least, three hundred of us about the whole Work; and I often fancied myself at the Tower of *Babel*, each Labourer, almost, speaking in a Language of his own.

Towards the latter End of our Work, our Keepers grew more and more remiss in their Care of us. At my first coming thither, I had contracted a Familarity with one of the Natives, but of a different Kingdom, who was then a Slave with me; and he and I being able tolerably to understand each other, he hinted to me, one Day, the Desire he had of seeing his own Country and Family; who, neither knew whether he was dead or alive, or where he was, since he had left them, seven Years before, to make War in this Kingdom; and insinuated, that as he had taken a great Liking to me, if I would endeavour to escape with him, and we succeeded, he would provide for me; for, says he, you see, now our Work is almost over, we are but slightly guarded, and if we stay till this Job is once finished, we may be commanded to some new Works, at the other End of the Kingdom, for ought we know; so that our Labours will only cease with our Lives; and, for my part, immediate Death, in the Attempt of Liberty, is to me, preferable to a lingring Life of Slavery.

These and such like Arguments prevailed on me to accompany him, as he had told me he had travelled most of the Country before, in the Wars of the different Nations; so, having taken our Resolution, the following Evening, soon after our Day's Work, and before the Time came for locking up, we withdrew from the rest, but within hearing; thinking, if we should then be missed, and called, we would ap-

 pear,

pear, and make ſome Excuſe for our Abſence, but if not, we ſhould have the whole Night before us.

When we were firſt put upon this Work, we were called over ſingly, by Name, Morning and Evening, to be let out and in, and were very narrowly obſerved in our Motions; but not one of us having been ever abſent, our Actions were at length much leſs minded than before, and the Ceremony of calling us over was frequently omitted; ſo that we concluded, if we got away unobſerved the firſt Night, we ſhould be out of the Reach of Purſuers by the next; which was the ſooneſt it was poſſible for them to overtake us, as we propoſed to travel, the firſt Part of the Journey, with the utmoſt Diſpatch.

CHAP. VII.

The Author eſcapes with Glanlepze, *a Native; their Hardſhips in Travel; plunder of a Cotage; his Fears; Adventure with a Crocodile; Paſſage of a River; Adventure with a Lioneſs and Whelp; arrive at* Glanlepze's *Houſe; the Trial of* Glanlepze's *Wife's Conſtancy; the tender meeting of her and her Huſband; the Author's Reflections thereupon.*

HAVING now ſet out with all poſſible Speed, we ſeemed to each other as joyful as we could; though it cannot be ſuppoſed we had no Fears in our Minds, the firſt Part of our Journey, for we had many; but as our Way advanced, our Fears ſubſided; and having, with ſcarce any Delay, puſhed forwards for the firſt twenty-

twenty-four Hours, Nature then began to have two very preſſing Demands upon us, Food and Reſt: But as one of them was abſolutely out of our Power to comply with, ſhe contented herſelf with the other, till we ſhould be better able to ſupply her, and gave a further Time till the next Day.

The next Morning found us very empty, and ſharp ſet, tho' a very ſound Night's Reſt had contributed its utmoſt to refreſh us. But what added much to our Diſcomfort was, that tho' our whole Subſiſtance muſt come from Fruits, there was not a Tree to be found at a leſs Diſtance than twelve Leagues, in the open rocky Country we were then in; but a good Draught of excellent Water, we met with, did us extraordinary Service, and ſent us with much better Courage to the Woods, tho' they were quite out of the Way of our Rout; there, by divers Kinds of Fruits, which, tho' my Companion knew very well, I was quite a Stranger to, we ſatisfied our Hunger for the preſent, and took a moderate Supply for another Opportunity. This retarded our Journey very much, for in ſo hard Travel every Pound weighed ſix before Night.

I cant ſay this Journey, though bad enough, would have been ſo diſcouraging, but for the Trouble of fetching our Proviſions ſo far; and then, if we meant not to loſe half the next Day in the ſame Manner, we muſt double load ourſelves, and delay our Progreſs by that Means; but we ſtill went on, and in about eight Days got quite clear of *Angola*.

On the eighth Day, my Companion, whoſe Name was *Glanlepze*, told me, we were very near the Confines of *Congo*; but there was one

little Village ſtill in *Angola*, by which we muſt paſs, within half a League; and, if I would agree to it, he would go ſee what might be got here to ſupply ourſelves with. I told him, I was in an unknown World, and would follow wherever he ſhould lead me; but aſked him if he was not afraid of the People, as he was not of that Country; he told me, as there had been Wars between them and his Country, for aſſiſting their Neighbours of *Congo*, he was not concerned for any Miſchief he ſhould do them, or they him; but, ſays he, you have a Knife in your Pocket, and with that we will cut two ſtout Clubs, and then follow me, fear nothing.

We ſoon cut our Clubs, and marching on, in the midſt of ſome ſmall Shrubs, and a few ſcattering Trees, we ſaw a little Hovel, larger indeed, but worſe contrived than an *Engliſh* Hogſtie, to which we boldly advanced; and *Glanlepze*, entering firſt, ſaluted an old Man who was lying on a Parcel of Ruſhes. The Man attempted to run away, but *Glanlepze* ſtopped him, and we tyed his Hands and Feet. He then ſet up ſuch a hideous Howl, that had not *Glanlepze* threatned to murder him, and prepared to do it, he would have raiſed the whole Village upon us; but we quieted him; and rumaging to find Proviſion, which was all we wanted, we, by good Luck, ſpied beſt Part of a Goat hanging up behind a large Mat at the further End of the Room. By this Time in comes a Woman, with two Children very ſmall. This was the old Man's Daughter, of about five and twenty. *Glanlepze* bound her alſo, and laid her by the old Man, but the two Children we ſuffered to lye untied. We then examined her, who told us, the old Man was her Father, and that her Husband

band having killed a Goat that Morning, was gone to carry Part of it to his Sister; that they had little or no Corn; and finding we wanted Victuals, she told us, there was an earthen Pot we might boil some of the Goat in if we pleased.

Having now seen all that was to be had, we were going to make up our Bundle, when a Muletto, very gently, put his Head into the Doorway; him, *Glanlepze* immediately seized; and bidding me fetch the great Mat, and the Goat's Flesh, he, in the mean Time, put a long Rope, he found there, about the Beast's Neck, and laying the Mat upon him, we packed up the Goat's Flesh, and a little Corn in a *Calabash* Shell; and then, turning up the Mat round about, skewered it together, and over all we tyed the earthen Pot; *Glanlepze* crying out, at every Thing we loaded, *it is no Hurt to plunder an Enemy*; and so we marched off.

I own, I had greater Apprehensions from this Adventure, than from any Thing before; for, says I, if the Woman's Husband returns soon, or if she, or her Father, can release themselves, they will raise the whole Village upon us, and we are undone: But *Glanlepze* laughed at me, saying, we had not an Hour's Walk out of the *Angola* Dominions; and that the King of *Congo* was at War with them, in helping the King of *Loango*, whose Subject himself was; and that the *Angolans* durst not be seen out of their Bounds on that Side the Kingdom; for there was a much larger Village of *Congovians* in our Way, who would certainly rise and destroy them, if they came in any Numbers amongst them; and though, the War being carried on near the Sea, the Borders were quiet, yet, upon the least Stir, the whole Country would be in Arms,

whilst we might retire thro' the Woods very safely.

Well, we marched on, as fast as we could, all the Remainder of that Day, till Moon-light, close by the Skirt of a long Wood, that we might take Shelter therein, if there should be Occasion; and my Eyes were the best Part of the Way behind me; but neither hearing nor seeing any Thing to annoy us, and finding, by the Declivity of the Ground, we should soon be in some Plain, or Bottom, and have a Chance of Water for us all, and Pasture for the Muletto, who was now become one of us, we would not halt, till we found a Bottom to the Hill; which in half an Hour more we came to, and in some Minutes after to a Rivulet of fine clear Water, where we resolved to spend the Night. Here we fastned our Muletto by his Cord to a Stake in the Ground; but perceiving him not to have sufficient Range to fill his Belly in before Morning, we, under *Glanlepze*'s Direction, cut several long Slips from the Mat, and soaking them well in Water, twisted them into a very strong Cord, of sufficient Length, for the Purpose. And now, having each of us brought a Bundle of dry fallen Sticks from the Wood with us, and gathered two or three Flints as we came along, we struck Fire on my Knife upon some rotten Wood, and boiled a good Piece of our Goat's Flesh; and having made such a Meal as we had neither of us made for many Months before, we laid us down and slept heartily till Morning.

As soon as Day broke we packed up our Goods, and, filling our *Calabash* with Water, we loaded our *Muletto*, and got forward very pleasantly that Day, and several others following and had tolerable Lodgings.

About

About Noon, one Day, travelling with great Glee, we met an Adventure which very much daunted me, and had almoſt put a Stop to my Hopes of ever getting where I intended. We came to a great River, whoſe Name I have now forgot, near a League over, but full, and eſpecially about the Shores, of large Trees that had fallen from the Mountains, and been rolled down with the Floods, and lodged there in a ſhocking Manner. This River *Glanlepze* told me we muſt paſs. For my part, I ſhrunk at the Sight of it, and told him, if he could get over, I would not deſire to prevent his meeting with his Family, but as for my Share, I had rather take my Chance in the Woods, on this Side, than plunge myſelf into ſuch a Stream, only for the Sake of Drowning. Oh! ſays *Glanlepze*, then you can't ſwim. No, ſays I, there's my Misfortune. Well, ſays the kind *Glanlepze*, be of good Heart, I'll have you over. He then bad me go cut an arm full of the talleſt of the Reeds that grew there near the Shore, whilſt he pulled up another, where he then was, and bring them to him. The Side of the River ſloped for a good Way with an eaſy Deſcent, ſo that it was very ſhallow where the Reeds grew, and they ſtood very cloſe together, upon a large Compaſs of Ground. I had no ſooner entred the Reeds a few Yards, to cut ſome of the longeſt, but (being about Knee deep in the Water and Mud, and every Step raiſing my Feet very high, to keep them clear of the Roots, which were matted together) I thought, I had trod upon a Trunck of one of the Trees, of which, as I ſaid, there was ſuch Plenty thereabouts; and raiſing my other Foot, to get that alſo upon the Tree, as I fancied it; I found it move along with me; upon which, I

roared out; when *Glanlepze*, who was not far from me, imagining what was the Matter, cried out, leap off, and run to ſhore to the Right. I knew not yet what was the Caſe, but did as I was bid, and gained the Shore. Looking back, I perceived the Reeds ſhake and ruſtle all the Way to the Shore, by Degrees after me. I was terribly frightened, and ran to *Glanlepze*, who then told me the Danger I had eſcaped, and that what I took for a Tree, was certainly a large Alligator, or Crocodile.

My Blood ran chill within me, at hearing the Name of ſuch a dangerous Creature; but he had no ſooner told me what it was, than out came the moſt hideous Monſter I had ever ſeen. *Glanlepze* ran to ſecure the Muletto; and then, taking the Cord which had faſtened him, and tying it to each End of a broken Arm of a Tree that lay on the Shore, he marched up to the Crocodile without the leaſt Diſmay, and beginning near the Tail, with one Leg on one Side, and the other on the other Side, he ſtraddled over him, ſtill mending his Pace as the Beaſt crept forward, till he came to his Fore-feet; then throwing the great Log before his Mouth, he by the Cord in his Hand, bobbed it againſt the Creature's Noſe, till he gaped wide enough to have taken in the Muletto; then, of a ſudden, jerking the Wood between his Jaws with all his Force, by the Cord, he gagged the Beaſt, with his Jaws wide open up to his Throat, ſo that he could neither make uſe of his Teeth, nor ſhut his Mouth; he then threw one End of the Cord upon the Ground, juſt before the Creature's under Jaw, which, as he by Degrees crept along over it, came out behind his Fore-Legs, on the contrary Side; and ſerving the other End of it in the ſame Manner, he took

up

up those Ends and tied them over the Creature's Back, just within his Fore-Legs, which kept the Gag firm in his Mouth; and then calling out to me, for I stood at a good Distance, *Peter*, says he, bring me your Knife; I trembled at going so near, for the Crocodile was turning his Head this Way and that very uneasy, and wanting to get to the River again, but yet I carried it, keeping as much behind him as I could, still eyeing him which Way he moved, and at length tossed my Knife so near, that *Glanlepze* could reach it; and he, just keeping behind the Beasts Fore-feet, and leaning forward, first darted the Knife into one Eye, and then into the other, and immediately leaping from his Back, came running to me. So *Peter*, says he, I have done the Business. Ay! Business enough, I think, says I, and more than I would have done, to have been King of *Congo*. Why *Peter*, says he, there is nothing but a Man may compass by Resolution, if he takes both Ends of a Thing in his View at once, and fairly deliberates on both Sides, what may be given and taken from End to End. What you have seen me perform, is only from a thorough Notion I have of this Beast, and of myself, how far each of us hath Power to act and counter-act upon the other, and duly applying the Means. But, says he, this talk will not carry us cross the River; come, here are the Reeds I have pulled up, which I believe will be sufficient without any more, for I would not overload the Muletto. ——Why, says I, is the Muletto to carry them? No, they are to carry you, says he. I can never ride upon these, says I. Hush, says he, I'll not lose you never fear. Come, cut me a good tough Stick, the Length of these Reeds. Well, says I, this is all Conjuration; but, I

don't ſee a Step towards my getting over the River yet, unleſs I am to ride the Muletto upon theſe Reeds, and guide myſelf with the Stick. I muſt own, *Peter*, ſays he, you have a bright Gueſs. So, taking an Armful of the Reeds, and laying them on the Ground, now *Peter*, ſays he, lay yourſelf down upon them. I then laying myſelf on my Back, lengthwiſe, upon the Reeds, *Glanlepze* laugh'd heartily at me, and turning me about, brought my Breaſt upon the Reeds at the Heighth of my Armpits; and then taking a Handful of the Reeds he had reſerved by themſelves, he laid them on my Back, tying them to the Bundle, cloſe at my Shoulders, and again at the Ends. Now *Peter*, ſays he, ſtand up; which I did; but, it was full as much as I could do. I then ſeeing *Glanlepze* laughing at the Figure I cut, deſired him to be ſerious, and not put me upon loſing my Life for a Joke; for, I could not think what he would do next with me. He bid me never fear, and looking more ſoberly, ordered me to walk to the River, and ſo ſtand juſt within the Bank till he came; then leading the Muletto to me, he tied me to her, about a Yard from the Tail, and taking the Cord in his Hand, led the Muletto and me into the Water. We had not gone far before my Guide began to ſwim; then the Muletto and I were preſently Chin deep, and I expected nothing but drowning every Moment; however, having gone ſo far, I was aſhamed to cry out; when getting out of my Depth, and my Reeds coming to their bearing, up I mounted, and was carried on with all the Eaſe imaginable: My Conductor guiding us between the Trees ſo dexterouſly, that not one Accident happened to either of us all the Way, and we arrived ſafe on the oppoſite Shore.

We

We had now got into a very low, close, swampy Country, and our Goat's Flesh began to be very stale, through the Heat not only of the Sun but the Muletto's Back; however, we pleased ourselves we should have one more Meal of it before it was too bad to eat; so having travelled about three Miles from the River, we took up our Lodging on a little Rising, and tyed our Muletto in a Valley about half a Furlong below us, where he made as good a Meal in his Way, as we did in ours.

We had but just supped, and were sauntring about to find the easiest Spot to sleep on, when we heard a rustling and a grumbling Noise, in a small Thicket just on our Right; which seeming to approach nearer and nearer, *Glanlepze* roused himself, and was on his Legs, just Time enough to see a Lioness, and a small Whelp which accompanied her, within thirty Yards of us, making towards us, as we afterwards guessed, for the Sake of our Goat's Flesh, which now smelt very strong. *Glanlepze* whipped on the contrary Side of the Fire to that where the Goat's Flesh lay, and fell to kicking the Fire about at a great Rate, which being made of dry Wood, caused innumerable Sparks to fly about us; but the Beasts still approaching in a couchant Manner, and seizing the Ribs of the Goat, and other Bones, for we had only cut the Flesh off, and grumbling and cracking them like rotten Twigs, *Glanlepze* snatched up a Fire-brand, flaming, in each Hand, and made towards them; which Sight so terrified the Creatures, that they fled with great Precipitation to the Thicket again.

Glanlepze was a little uneasy at the Thoughts of quitting so good a Lodging as we had found, but yet held it best to move farther; for as the Lions

had

had left the Bones behind them, we must expect another Visit if we stayed there, and could hope for no Rest; and above all, we might possibly lose our Muletto; so we removed our Quarters two Miles further, where we slept with great Tranquility.

Reflections on the Nature of Mankind, have often astonished me. I told you at first, my Thoughts concerning Prayer, in my Journey to *Bristol*, and of the Benefit I received from it, and how fully I was convinced of the Necessity of it; which one would think was a sufficient Motive to a reasonable Creature to be constant in it; and yet it is too true, that notwithstanding the Difficulties I had laboured under, and Harships I had undergone, and the Danger of starving at Sea, or being murdered for Food by my Fellows, when there was as urgent a Necessity of begging divine Assistance as can be conceived, I never once thought of it, nor of the Object of it, nor returned Thanks for my being delivered, till the Lioness had just left me: And then I felt near the same Force, urging me to return Thanks for my Escape, as I had impelling me to Prayer before; and I think I did so with great Sincerity.

I shall not trouble you with a Relation of the common Accidents of our Journey, which lasted two Months and better, nor with the different Method, we used to get Subsistance; but shall at once conduct you to *Quamis*: Only mention that we were sometimes obliged to go about; and were once stopped by a Cut that my Guide and Companion receiv'd by a ragged Stone in his Foot, which growing very bad almost deprived me of the Hopes of his Life; but, by Rest, and constant sucking and licking it, which was the only

Remedy

Remedy we had to apply, except green Leaves chewed, that I laid to it by his Direction, to supple and cool it, he soon began to be able to ride upon the Muletto, and sometimes to walk a little.

I say, we arrived at *Quamis*, a small Place on a River of that Name, where *Glanlepze* had a neat Dwelling, and left a Wife and five Children when he went out to the Wars. We were very near the Town when the Day closed, and, as it is soon dark there after Sun-set, you could but just see your Hand at our Entrance into it. We met nobody in the Way, but I went directly to *Glanlepze*'s Door, by his Direction, and struck two or three Strokes hard against it with my Stick. On this there came a Woman to it stark-naked. I asked her, in her own Language, if she knew one *Glanlepze*? She told me, with a deep Sigh, that once she did. I asked then, where he was? She said with their Ancestors, she hoped, for he was the greatest Warrior in the World; but, if he was not dead, he was in Slavery. Now, you must know, *Glanlepze* had a mind to hear how his Wife took his Death, or Slavery, and had put me upon asking these Questions before he discovered himself. I proceeded then to tell her, I brought some News of *Glanlepze*, and was lately come from him, and by his Order. And does my dear *Glanlepze* live, says she, flying about my Neck, and almost smothering me with Caresses, till I begged her to forbear, or she would strangle me, and I had a great deal more to tell her; then ringing for a Light, when she saw I was a white Man, she seem'd in the utmost Confusion at her own Nakedness, and immediately retiring, she threw a Cloth round her Waist, and came to me again. I then repeated to her, that her Husband was alive and well,

well, but wanted a Ranſom to redeem himſelf, and had ſent me to ſee what ſhe could any Ways raiſe for that Purpoſe. She told me, ſhe and her Children had lived very hardly ever ſince he went from her, and ſhe had nothing to ſell, or make Money of, but her five Children; that, as this was the Time for the Slaving Trade, ſhe would ſee what ſhe could raiſe by them, and if that would not do, ſhe would ſell herſelf and ſend him the Money, if he would let her know how to do it.

Glanlepze, who heard every Word that paſſed, finding ſo ſtrong a Proof of his Wife's Affection, could hold out no longer, but, burſting into the Room, claſped her in his Arms, crying, no, *Zulika*, for that was her Name, I am free; there will be no Occaſion for your or my dear Children's Slavery; and rather than have purchaſed my Freedom at that Rate, I would willingly have died a Slave myſelf. But my own Ears have heard the tender Sentiments my *Zulika* has for me. Then, drowned in Tears of Joy, they embraced each other ſo cloſe, and ſo long, that I thought it impertinent to be ſeen with them, till their firſt Tranſports were over. So I retir'd without the Houſe, till *Glanlepze* called me in, which was not in leſs than full half an Hour. I admired at the Love and Conſtancy of the Perſons I had juſt left behind me; and, good Heaven, thinks I to myſelf, with a Sigh, how happy has this our Eſcape rendered *Glanlepze* and his Wife! what a mutual Felicity do they feel! And what is the Cauſe of all this? Is it that he has brought Home great Treaſures from the Wars? Nothing like it, he is come naked. Is it that having eſcaped Slavery and Poverty he is returned to an opulent Wife, abounding with the

the good Things of Life? No ſuch Thing. What then can be the Cauſe of this Exceſs of Satiſfaction, this alternate Joy, that *Patty* and I could not have been as happy with each other? Why, it was my Pride that interpoſed and prevented it. But what am I like to get by it, and by all this Travel, and theſe Hazards? Is this the Way to make a Fortune, to get an Eſtate? No ſurely, the very contrary. I could not forſooth labour for *Patty*, and her Children, where I was known; but am I any better for labouring here, where I am not known, where I have no body to aſſiſt me, than I could have been where I am known, and where there would have been my Friends about me, at leaſt, if they could have afforded no great Aſſiſtance? I have been deceived then, and have travelled ſo many thouſand Miles, and undergone ſo many Dangers, only, to know at laſt, I had been happier at home; and have doubled my Miſery, for want of Conſideration, that very Conſideration, which, impartially taken, would have convinced me I ought to have made the beſt of my bad Circumſtances, and to have laid hold of every commendable Method of improving them. Did I come hither to avoid daily Labour or voluntary Servitude at home? I have had it in Abundance. Did I come hither to avoid Poverty and Contempt? Here I have met with 'em ten fold. And now, after all, was I to return Home empty and naked, as *Glanlepze* has done; ſhould I meet a Wife, as bare as myſelf, ſo ready to die in my Embraces, and to be a Slave myſelf, with her Children, for my Sake only? I fear not.

Theſe and the like Reflections had taken Poſſeſſion of me, when *Glanlepze* called me in; where

where I found his Wife, in her Manner, preparing our Supper, with all that Chearfulness which gives a true Lustre to Innocence.

The Bustle we made, had by this Time awakened the Children; who, stark naked, as they were born, both Boys and Girls, came crawling out, and black as Jett, from behind a Curtain, at the further End of the Room, which was very long. The Father, as yet, had only enquired after them, but, upon Sight of them, he fell into an Extacy, kissing one, stroaking another, dandling a third, for the eldest was scarce fourteen; but not one of them knew him, for seven Years makes a great Chasm in young Memories. The more I saw of this Sport the stronger Impressions *Patty* and my own Children made upon me. My Mind had been so much employed on my own Distresses, that those dear Ideas were almost effaced; but this moving Scene introduced them afresh, and imprinted 'em deeply on my Imagination, which cherished the sweet Remembrance.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

How the Author passed his Time with Glanlepze; *his Acquaintance with some* English *Prisoners; they project an Escape; he joins them; they seize a* Portugueze *Ship, and get off; make a long run from Land; want Water; they anchor at a desert Island; the Boat goes on Shore for Water; they lose their Anchor in a Storm; the Author and one* Adams *drove to Sea; a miraculous Passage to a Rock;* Adams *drowned there; the Author's miserable Condition.*

I Passed my Time with *Glanlepze* and his Wife, who both really loved me, with sufficient bodily Quiet, for about two Years; my Business was chiefly, in company with my Patron, to cultivate a Spot of Ground wherein we had planted Grain and Necessaries for the Family; and once or twice a Week we went a fishing; and sometimes hunted, and shot Venison. These were our chief Employments; for as to Excursions for Slaves, which is a Practice in many of those Countries, and what the Natives get Money by, since our own Slavery, *Glanlepze* and I could not endure it.

Though I was tolerably easy in my external Circumstances, yet my Mind hankering after *England* made my Life still unhappy; and that Infelicity daily increased, as I saw the less Probability of attaining my Desire. At length hearing of some *European* Sailors, who were under Confinement for contraband Trade at a *Portuguese* Fort, about two Leagues from *Quamis*, I resolved to go to see them; and if any of them should be *English*, at least to enquire after

my

my native Country. I went, and found two *Dutchmen*, who had been Sailors in *English* Pay several Years, three *Scotchmen*, an *Irishman*, and five *Englishmen*, but all had been long in *English* Merchants Service. They were taken, as they told me, by a *Portugueze* Vessel, together with their Ship, as a *Dutch* Prize, under Pretence of contraband Trade. The Captain was known to be a *Dutchman*, though he spoke good *English*, and was then in *English* Pay, and his Vessel *English*: Therefore they would have it that he was a *Dutch* Trader, and so seized his Ship in the Harbour, with the Prisoners in it. The Captain, who was on Shore with several of his Men, was threatned to be laid in Irons, if he was taken; which obliged him and his Men to abscond, and fly over Land, to an *English* Factory, for Assistance to recover his Ship and Cargoe; being afraid to appear, and claim it, amongst so many Enemies, without an additional Force. They had been in Confinement two Months, and their Ship confiscated and sold. In this miserable Condition I left them, but returned once or twice a Week, for a Fortnight or three Weeks, to visit them. These Instances of Regard, as they thought them, created some Confidence in me, so that they conversed with me very freely. Amongst other Discourse, they told me one Day, that one of their Crew, who went with the Captain, had been taken ill on the Way, and being unable to proceed, was returned; but as he talked good *Portuguese*, he was not suspected to belong to them; and that he had been to visit them, and would be there again that Day. I had a Mind to see him, so stayed longer than I intended, and in about an Hour's Time he came. After he was seated, he asked, who I was? and, privately,

privately, if I might be trusted? Being satisfied I might, for that I was a *Cornish* Man, he began as follows, looking narrowly about to see he was not overheard: My Lads, says he, be of good Courage, I have Hopes for you, be but Men, and we shall see better Days yet. I wondered to what this Preface tended, when he told us, That since his Return from the Captain, as he spoke good *Portugueze*, and had sailed on Board *Portugueze* Traders several Years, he mixed among that People, and particularly among the Crew of the *Del Cruz*, the Ship which had taken them; that that Ship had partly unloaded, and was taking in other Goods for a future Voyage; that he had informed himself of their Strength, and that very seldom more than three Men and two Boys lay on Board; that he had hired himself to the Captain, and was to go on Board the very next Day. Now, says he, my Lads, if you can break Prison any Night after To-morrow, and come directly to the Ship, (telling them how she lay, for, says he, you can't mistake, you will find two or three Boats moored in the Gut against the Church) I will be ready to receive you, and we'll get off with her, in lieu of our Ship they have taken from us; for there is nothing ready to follow us.

The Prisoners listned to this Discourse very attentively; but scratched their heads, fearing the Difficulty of it, and severer Usage if they miscarried and made several Objections; but, at last, they all swore to attempt it, the Night but one following. Upon which the Sailor went away, to prepare for their Reception on board. After he was gone, I surveyed his Scheme attentively in my own Mind, and found it not so difficult as I first imagined, if the Prisoners could but escape cleverly.

cleverly. So, before I went away, I told them, I approved of their Purpose; and as I was their Countryman, I was resolved, with their Leaves, to risk my Fortune with them. At this they seemed much pleased, and all embraced me. We then fixed the peremptory Night, and I was to wait at the Water-Side, and get the Boats in Readiness.

The Prison they were in was a *Portugueze* Fort, which had been deserted ever since the Building a much better on the other Side of the River, a Gun-shot lower. It was built with Walls too thick for naked Men to storm; the Captives were securely locked up every Night; and two Soldiers, or Centinels, kept Watch in an outer Room, who were relieved from the Main Guard in the Body of the Building.

The expected Night arrived; and a little before Midnight, as had been concerted, one of the Prisoners cried out, he was so parched up, he was on Fire, he was on Fire. The Centinels were both asleep; but the first that waked, called at the Door, to know what was the Matter; the Prisoner still crying out, I am on Fire, the rest begged the Centinel to bring a Bowl of Water for him, for they knew not what ailed him.

The good natured Fellow, without waking his Companion, brought the Water, and having a Lamp in the Guard-Room, opened the Door; when the Prisoners seizing his Arms, and commanding him to Silence, bound his Hands behind him, and his Feet together; then serving the other in the same Manner, who was now just awake, and taking from them their Swords and Musquets, they made the best of their Way over the Fort Wall; which, being built with Buttresses on the Inside, was easily surmounted. Being got out,

out, they were not long a finding me, who had before this Time made the Boats ready, and was impatiently waiting for them; so in we all got, and made good Speed to the Ship, where we were welcomed by our Companion, ready to receive us.

Under Pretence of being a new entered Sailor, he had carried some *Madeira* Wine on board, and treated the Men and Boys so freely, that he had thrown them into a dead Sleep; which was a wise Precaution. There being now therefore no Fear of Disturbance, or Interruption, we drew up the two Boats, and set all Hands at work to put the Ship under Way; and plyed it so closely, the Wind favouring us, that by Eleven o'Clock the next Morning, we were out of Sight of Land; but we set the Men and Boys adrift, in one of the Boats, nigh the Mouth of the River.

The first Thing we did, after we had made a long run from Shore, was to consult what Course to steer. Now, as there was a valuable Loading on Board, of Goods from *Portugal*, and others taken in since, some gave their Opinion for sailing directly to *India*, selling the Ship and Cargo there, and returning by some *English* Vessel. But that was rejected; for we did not doubt but Notice would be given of our Escape along the Coast; and if we should fall into the *Portuguese* Hands, we could expect no Mercy; besides we had not People sufficient for such an Enterprize. Others again, were for sailing the directest Course for *England*. But, I told them, as our Opinions were different, and no Time was to be lost; my Advice was, to stretch Southward, till we might be quite out of Fear of Pursuit, and then, whatever Course we took, by keeping clear of all Coasts we might hope to come safe off.

My

My Proposal seemed to please the whole Crew; so, crowding all the Sail we could, we pushed Southward very briskly, before the Wind, for several Days. We now went upon examining our Stores, and found we had Flour enough, Plenty of Fish, and Salt Provisions, but were scant of Water and Wood: Of the first wherof there was not half a Ton, and but very little of the latter. This made us very uneasy; and being none of us expert in Navigation, farther than the common working of the Ship, and having no Chart on Board, that might direct us to the nearest Land, we were almost at our Wit's End, and came to a short Allowance of Liquor. That we must get Water if we could, was indisputable; but where to do it puzzled us: As we had determined not to get in with the *African* Shore, on any Account whatever.

In this Perplexity, and under the Guidance of different Opinions, for we were all Captains now, we sometimes steered Eastward, and sometimes Westward for about nine Days; when we espied a little bluish Cloud-like Appearance, to the South-West. This continuing, we hoped it might be Land, and therefore made to it. Upon our nearer Approach, we found it to be, as we judged, an Island; but, not knowing its Name, or whether it was inhabited, we coasted round it two Days, to satisfy ourselves as to this last Particular. Seeing no living Creature on it during that Time, and the Shore being very broken, we came to an Anchor about two Miles from it, and sent Ten of our Crew in our best Boat, with some Casks, to get Water and cut Wood. The Boat returned at Night, with six Men, and the Casks filled, having left four behind, to go on with the cutting of Wood against next Day. Accordingly

cordingly next Morning the Boat went off again, and made two Turns with Water and Wood ere Night; which was repeated for two or three Days after. On the ſixth ſhe went off for Wood only, leaving none but me and one *John Adams* a Board.

The Boat had ſcarce reached the Iſland, this laſt Turn, before the Day overcaſt, and there aroſe ſuch a Storm of Wind, Thunder, Lightning, and Hail, as I had never before ſeen. At laſt our Cable broke cloſe to the Anchor, and away we went with the Wind, full Southward by Weſt; and not having Strength to keep the Ship upon a Side Wind, we were forced to ſet her Head right before it, and let her drive. Our Hope was, every Hour, the Storm would abate; but it continued with equal Violence for many Days; during all which Time, neither *Adams* nor I had any reſt; for one, or other of us was forced, and ſometimes both, to keep her right before the Wind, or ſhe would certainly have overſet. When the Storm abated, as it did by Degrees, neither *Adams* nor I could tell where we were, or even in what Part of the World.

I was ſorry I had no better a Sailor with me, for neither *Adams* nor myſelf had ever made more than one Voyage till now; ſo that we were both unacquainted with the Latitude, and ſcarce knew the Uſe of the Compaſs to any Purpoſe; and, being out of all Hope of ever reaching the Iſland, to our Companions, we neither knew which Way to ſteer, nor what to do. And indeed, had we known where we were, we two only could not have been able to navigate the Ship to any Part we deſired; or ever get to the Iſland, unleſs ſuch a Wind as we had before, would of itſelf have driven us thither.

Whilſt

Whilst we were considering Day after Day what to do, though the Sea was now very calm and smooth, the Ship seemed to sail at as great a Rate as before; which we attributed to the Velocity she had acquired by the Storm, or to Currents that had set that Way by the Violence of the Winds. Contenting ourselves with this, we expected all soon to be right again; and as we had no Prospect of ever seeing our Companions, we kept the best look out we could, to see for any Vessel coming that Course, which might take us in; and resolved to rest all our Hopes upon that.

When we had sailed a good while after this Manner, we knew not whither, *Adams* called out, I see Land. My Heart leaped within me for Joy, and we hoped, the Current that seemed to carry us so fast, set in for some Islands or Rivers that lay before us. But still we were exceedingly puzzled at the Ship's making such Way; and the nearer and nearer we approached the Land, which was now very visible, the more Speed the Ship made; though there was no Wind stirring. We had but just Time to think on this unexpected Phænomenon, when we found, that what we had taken for Land, was a Rock of an extraordinary Height, to which, as we advanced nearer, the Ship increased its Motion; and all our Strength could not make her answer her Rudder any other Way. This put us under the Apprehension of being dashed to Pieces immediately; and in less than half an Hour, I verily thought my Fears had not been groundless. Poor *Adams* told me he would try, when the Ship struck, if he could leap upon the Rock, and ran to the Head for that Purpose; but I was so fearful of seeing my Danger, that I ran under Hatches, resolving to sink

in

in the Ship. We had no ſooner parted, but I felt ſo violent a Shock, that I verily thought the Ship had brought down the whole Rock upon her, and been thereby daſhed to Pieces; ſo that I never more expected to ſee the Light.

I lay under this Terror for at leaſt half an Hour; waiting the Ship's either filling with Water or bulging every Moment. But finding neither Motion in her, nor any Water riſe, nor the leaſt Noiſe whatſoever, I ventured with an aching Heart from my Retreat, and ſtole up the Hatchway, as if an Enemy had been on Deck, peeping firſt one Way, then another. Here nothing preſented but Confuſion; the Rock hung over the Hatchway, at about twenty Feet above my Head, our Foremaſt lay by the Board, the Mainmaſt Yard-arm was down, and great Part of the Mainmaſt ſnapped off with it, and almoſt every thing upon Deck was diſplaced. This Sight ſhocked me extremely; and calling for *Adams*, in whom I hoped to find ſome comfort, I was too ſoon convinced I had loſt him.

CHAP. IX.

Wilkins *thinks of deſtroying himſelf; his Soliloquy; ſtrange Accident in the Hold; his Surprize; can't climb the Rock; his Method to ſweeten his Water; lives many Months on board; ventures to Sea in his Boat ſeveral Times, and takes many Fiſh; almoſt overcome by an Eel.*

AFter I had ſtood a while in the utmoſt Confuſion of Thought, and my Spirits began to be a little compoſed, I was reſolved to ſee what Damage the Hull of the Ship had received.

Accordingly I looked narrowly, but could find none, only ſhe was immoveably fixed in a Cleft of the Rock, like a large Arch-way; and there ſtuck ſo faſt, that tho' upon fathoming, I could find no Bottom, ſhe never moved in the leaſt, by the Working of the Water.

I now began to look upon *Adams* as a happy Man, being delivered by immediate Death, from ſuch an inextricable Scene of Diſtreſs, and wiſh'd myſelf with him a thouſand Times. I had a great Mind to have followed him into the other World; yet, I know not how it is, there is ſomething ſo abhorrent to human Nature, in Self-Murder, be one's Condition what it will, that I was ſoon determined on the contrary Side. Now again I perceived that the Almighty had given me a large Field to expatiate in upon the Trial of his Creatures; by bringing them into imminent Dangers, ready to overwhelm them, and at the ſame Time, as it were, hanging out the Flag of Truce and Mercy to them. Theſe Thoughts brought me to my Knees, and I pour'd out my Soul to God, in a Strain of Humiliation, Reſignation to his Will, and earneſt Petitions for Deliverance, or Support in this Diſtreſs. Having finiſhed, I found myſelf in a more compoſed Frame; ſo having eaten a Biſcuit, and drank a Can of Water, and not ſeeing any Thing to be done whereby I could better my Condition, I ſat me down upon the Deck, and fell into the following Soliloquy.

Peter, ſays I, what have you to do here? Alas, reply'd I to myſelf, I am fixed againſt my Will, in this diſmal Manſion, deſtin'd, as Rats might be, to devour the Proviſions only, and, having eat all up, to periſh with Hunger for Want of a Supply. Then, ſays I, of what Uſe

are

are you in the World, *Peter?* Truly, anſwer'd I, of no other Uſe, that I can ſee, but to be an Object of Miſery for divine Vengeance to work upon, and to ſhew, what a deplorable State human Nature can be reduced to: For I can't think any one elſe can be ſo wretched. And again, *Peter*, ſays I, what have you been doing ever ſince you came into the World? I am afraid, ſays I, I can anſwer no better to this Queſtion than to either of the former; for, if only reaſonable Actions are to be reckoned among my Doings, I am ſure I have done little worth recording. For, let me ſee, what it all amounts to: I ſpent my firſt ſixteen Years, in making a Fool of my Mother; my three next in letting her make a Fool of me; and in being Fool enough myſelf to get me a Wife and two Children before I was twenty. The next Year was ſpent in finding out the Miſery of Slavery from Experience. Two Years more I repin'd at the Happineſs of my Benefactor, and at finding it was not my Lot to enjoy the ſame. This Year is not yet ſpent, and how many more are to come, and where they may be paſs'd, and what they may produce, requires a better Head than mine even to gueſs at; but certainly my preſent Situation ſeems to promiſe nothing beſide Woe and Miſery. But hold a little, ſays I, and let me clearly ſtate my own Wretchedneſs. I am here, 'tis true, but for any Good I have ever done, or any Advantage I have reaped in other Places, I am as well here as any where. I have no preſent Want of Food, or unjuſt or cruel Enemy to annoy me; ſo, as long as the Ship continues entire, and Proviſions laſt, I ſhall do tolerably. Then, why ſhould I grieve or terrify myſelf about what may come. What my frighted Imigination ſuggeſts may per-

haps never happen. Deliverance, though not to be looked for, is yet possible. And my future Fate may be as different from my present Condition, as this is from the Hopes with which I lately flattered myself. And why, after all, may I not die a natural Death here, as well as any where? All Mankind do die, and then there is an End of all. —An End of all, did I say,—no, there is something within that gives me the Lie, when I say so. Let me see, Death (my Master used to say) is not an End, but a Beginning of real Life. And may it not be so?—May I not as well undergo a Change, from this to a different State of Life, when I leave this World, as be born into it, I know not from whence? Who sent me into this World? Who framed me of two Natures so unlike, that Death cannot destroy but one of them? It must be the Almighty God: But all God's Works tend to some End. And if he has given me an immortal Nature, it must be his Intention that I should live somewhere and somehow for ever. May not this Stage of Being then be only an Introduction to, a Preparative for, another? There is nothing in this Supposition repugnant to Reason. Upon the whole; if God is the Author of my Being, he only has a Right to dispose of it; and I may not put an End thereto without his Leave. It is no less true, that my continuing therein during his Pleasure, and because it is so, may turn vastly to my Advantage in his good Time; it may be the Means of my becoming happy for ever, when it is his Will that I go hence. It is no less probable, that, dismal as my present Circumstances appear, I may be even now the Object of a kind Providence. God may be leading me by Affliction to Repentance of former Crimes; destroying those

sensual

ſenſual Affections that have all my Days kept me from loving and ſerving him. I will therefore ſubmit myſelf to his Will, and hope for his Mercy.

Theſe Thoughts and many others I then had compoſed me very much, and by Degrees reconciled me to my deſtined Solitude. I walked my Ship, of which I was now both Maſter and Owner, and employed myſelf in ſearching how it was faſtened to the Rock, and where it reſted; but all to no Purpoſe, as to that particular. I then ſtruck a Light, and went into the Hold, to ſee what I could find uſeful; for we had never ſearched the Ship ſince we took her.

In the Hold, I found Abundance of long Iron Bars, which I ſuppoſe were brought out to be trafficked with the Blacks. I obſerved they lay all with one End cloſe to the Head of the Ship, which I preſumed was occaſioned by the violent Shock they received when ſhe ſtruck againſt the Rock; but ſeeing one ſhort Bar lying out beyond the Reſt, though touching at the End one of the long Bars, I thought to take it up, and lay it on the Heap with the others; but the Moment I had raiſed the End next the other Bars, it flew out of my Hand, with ſuch Violence, againſt the Head of the Ship, and with ſuch a Noiſe, as greatly ſurpriſed me, and put me in fear it had broke through the Plank.

I juſt ſtay'd to ſee no harm was done, and run upon Deck, with my Hair ſtiff on my Head; nor could I conceive leſs, than that ſome ſubtil Spirit had done this Prank, meerly to terrify me.

It ran in my Pate ſeveral Days, and I durſt upon no Account have gone into the Hold again, though my whole Support had lain there; nay,

it even ſpoiled my Reſt, for fear ſomething tragical ſhould befall me, of which this amazing Incident was an Omen.

About a Week after, as I was ſhifting myſelf, (for I had not taken my Cloaths off ſince I came there) and putting on a new Pair of Shoes which I found on Board, my own being very bad, taking out Iron Buckles, I laid one of them upon a broken Piece of the Maſt that I ſat upon; when, to my Aſtoniſhment, it was no ſooner out of my Hand, but up it flew to the Rock, and ſtuck there. I could not tell what to make of it; but was ſorry the Devil had got above Deck. I then held ſeveral other Things, one after another, in my Hand, and laid them down where I laid the Buckle, but nothing ſtirred, till I took out the Fellow of that from the Shoes; when letting it go, away it jumped alſo to the Rock.

I muſed on theſe Phenomena for ſome Time, and could not forbear calling upon God to protect me from the Devil, who muſt as I imagined have a Hand in ſuch unaccountable Things, as they then ſeemed to me. But at Length Reaſon got the better of theſe fooliſh Apprehenſions, and I began to think there might be ſome natural Cauſe of them, and next to be very deſirous of finding it out. In order to this I ſet about making Experiments, to try what would run to the Rock, and what would not. I went into the Captain's Cabin, and opening a Cupboard, of which the Key was in the Door, I took out a Pipe, a Bottle, a Pocket-Book, a Silver Spoon, a Tea-cup, &c. and laid 'em ſucceſſively near the Rock; when none of them anſwered; but the Key which I had brought out of the Cupboard, on my Finger, dropping off, while I was thus employed, no ſooner it was diſengaged, but

away

away it went to it. After that I tryed ſeveral other Pieces of Iron-ware, with the like ſucceſs. Upon this, and the Needle of my Compaſs ſtanding ſtiff to the Rock, I concluded that this ſame contained great Quantity of Load-ſtone, or was itſelf one vaſt Magnet, and that our Lading of Iron was the Cauſe of the Ship's violent Courſe thereto, which I mentioned before.

This quite ſatisfied me, as to my Notion of Spirits, and gave me a more undiſturbed Night's Reſt than I had had before; ſo that now, having nothing to affright me, I paſſed the Time tolerably well in my Solitude, as it grew by Degrees familiar to me.

I had often wiſhed it had been poſſible for me to climb the Rock; but it was ſo ſmooth in many Places, and craggy in others, and over hanging, continuing juſt the ſame to the Right and Left of me as far as ever I could ſee, that from the Impoſſibility of it, I diſcharged all Thoughts of ſuch an Attempt.

I had now lived on board three Months, and perceived the Days grow ſhorter and ſhorter, 'till, having loſt the Sun for a little Time, they were quite dark: That is, there was no abſolute Day-light, or indeed viſible Diſtinction between Day and Night; though it were never ſo dark, but I could ſee well enough upon Deck to go about.

What now concerned me the moſt was, my Water, which began to grow very bad (though I had plenty of it) and unſavory, ſo that I could ſcarce drink it; but had no Proſpect of better. Now and then indeed it ſnowed a little, which I made ſome uſe of; but this was far from contenting me. Hereupon I began to contrive, and having nothing elſe to do, I ſet two open Veſ-

ſels

ſels upon Deck, and drawing Water from the Hold, I filled one of my Veſſels, and letting it ſtand a Day and a Night, I poured it into the other, and ſo ſhifted it every twenty-four Hours; this, I found, though it did not bring it to the primitive Taſte, and render it altogether palatable, was nevertheleſs a great Help to it, by incorporating the freſh Air with it; ſo that it became very potable: And this Method I conſtantly uſed with my drinking Water, ſo long as I ſtayed on board the Ship.

It had now been ſharp Weather for ſome Time; and the Cold ſtill increaſing, this put me upon ramaging the Ship further than ever I thought to do before; when opening a little Cabin under Deck, I found a large Cargo of fine *French* Brandy, a great many Bottles and ſome ſmall Caſks of *Madeira* Wine, with divers Cordial Waters. Having taſted theſe, and taken out a Bottle or two of Brandy, and ſome *Madeira*, I locked up my Door, and looked no farther that Time.

The next Day I inquired into my Proviſions; and ſome of my Fleſh having ſoaked out the Pickle, I made freſh Pickle, and cloſed it up again. I that Day alſo found ſeveral Cheeſes, caſed up in Lead, one of which I then opened and dined upon: But what Time of Day or Night it was when I eat this Meal I could not tell. I found a great many Cheſts well filled, and one or two of Tools, which ſome Years after ſtood me in a very good ſtead; though I did not expect they would ever be of that Service when I firſt met with them.

In this Manner I ſpent my Time till I began to ſee broad Day-light again, which cheared me greatly. I had been often put in hopes, during the

the dark Seaſon, that Ships were coming towards me, and that I ſhould once more have the Converſation of Mankind; for I had, by the ſmall glimmering, ſeen many large Bodies (to my thinking) move at a little Diſtance from me, and particularly toward the re-appearing of the Light; but though I hallowed as loud as I could, and often fired my Gun, I never received an Anſwer.

When this Light returned, my Days increaſed in Porportion as they had before decreaſed; and gathering Comfort from that, I determined to launch my ſmall Boat, and to coaſt along the Iſland, as I judged it, to ſee if it was inhabited, and by whom; I determined alſo to make me ſome Lines for Fiſhing, and carry my Gun, to try for other Game, if I found a Place for Landing: For though I had never, ſince my Arrival, ſeen a ſingle living Creature but my Cat, except Inſects, of which there were many in the Water, and in the Air, before the dark Weather, and then began to appear again; yet I could not but think there were both Birds and Beaſts to be met with.

Upon launching my Boat, I perceived ſhe was very leaky; ſo I let her fill, and continue thus a Week or more, to ſtop her Cracks; then getting down the Side of my Ship, I ſcooped her quite dry, and found her very fit for uſe; ſo, putting on board my Gun, Lines, Brandy Bottles, and a Cloaths-cheſt for a Seat, with ſome little Water, and Proviſions for a Week, I once more committed myſelf to the Sea: Having taken all the Obſervation I could, to gain my Ship again, if any Accident ſhould happen; tho' I reſolved, upon no Account, to quit ſight of the Rock willingly.

I had

I had not row'd very long, before I thought I saw an Island to my right, about a League distant, to which I inclined to steer my Course, the Sea being very calm; but, upon surveying it nearer, I found it only a great Cake of Ice, about forty Yards high above the Water, and a Mile or two in length. I then concluded, that what I had before taken for Ships, were only these Lumps of Ice. Being thus disappointed as to my Island, I made what haste I could back to the Rock again, and coasted part of its Circumference; but tho' I had gone two or three Leagues of its Circuit, the Prospect it afforded was just the same.

I then try'd my Lines, by fastning several very long ones, made of the Log-line, to the Side of the Boat, baiting them with several different Baits, but took only one Fish of about four Pounds weight, very much resembling a Haddock; part of which I dressed for my Supper, after my Return to the Ship, and it proved very good. Towards Evening I return'd to my Home, as I may call it.

The next Day I made a Voyage on the other Side of the Rock, tho' but to a small Distance from the Ship, with Intent only to fish, but took nothing. I had then a Mind to victual my Boat, or little Cruizer, and prepare myself for a Voyage of two or three Days; which I thought I might safely undertake, as I had never seen a troubled Sea since I came to the Island; for, tho' I heard the Wind often roaring over my Head, yet it coming away from the Land-side, it never disturbed the Water near the Shore. I set out the same Way I went at first, designing to sail two or three Days out, and as many Home again; and resolved, if possible, to fathom the

Depth

Depth as I went. With this View I prepared a very long Line, with a large Shot tyed in a Rag at the End of it, by way of Plummet; but I felt no Ground 'till the ſecond Night. The next Mornin' , came into thirty fathom Water, then twenty, then ſixteen. In both Tours I could perceive no Abatement in the Height or Steepneſs of the Rock.

In about fourteen Fathom Water I drop'd my Lines, and lay by for an Hour or two. Feeling ſeveral Jars, as I ſat on my Cheſt in the Boat, I was ſure I had caught ſomewhat; ſo pulling up my Lines ſucceſſively, I brought firſt a large Eel, near ſix Feet long, and almoſt as thick as my Thigh, whoſe Mouth, Throat, and Fins, were of a fine Scarlet, and the Belly as white as Snow: He was ſo ſtrong, while in the Water, and weighty, I had much ado to get him into the Boat, and then had a harder Job to kill him; for though having a Hatchet with me, to cut Wood in caſe I met with any landing Place, I chopped off his Head, the Moment I had him on board, yet he had ſeveral Times after that liked to have broken my Legs, and beat me overboard, before I had quite taken his Life from him; and, had I not whipped off his Tail, and alſo divided his Body into two or three Pieces, I could not have maſter'd him. The next I pull'd up was a thick Fiſh like a Tench, but of another Colour and much bigger. I drew up ſeveral others, flat and long Fiſh, till I was tired with the Sport; and then I ſet out for the Ship again, which I reach'd the third Day.

During this whole time I had but one Shot, that was as I came homewards, at a Creature I ſaw upon a high Crag of the Rock, which I fired at with Ball, fearing that my ſmall Shot would not

not reach it. The Animal being mortally wounded, bounded up, and came tumbling down the Rock, very near me. I pick'd it up, and found it to be a Creature not much unlike our Rabbits, but with ſhorter Ears, a longer Tail, and hoofed like a Kid, tho' it had the perfect Fluck of a Rabbit. I put it into my Boat, to contemplate on when I arrived at the Ship; and plying my Oars, got ſafe, as I ſaid, on the third Day.

I made me a Fire, to cook with, as ſoon as I had got my Cargo out of the Boat into my Ship, but was under Debate which of my Dainties to begin upon. I had ſometimes a Mind to have boiled my Rabbit, as I called it, and boiled ſome of my Fiſh; but being tired, I hung up my Fleſh till the next Day, and boiled two or three Sorts of my Fiſh, to try which was beſt. I knew not the Nature of moſt of them, ſo I boiled a Piece of my Eel, to be ſure, judging that, however I might like others, I ſhould certainly be able to make a good Meal of that. This Variety being ready, I took a little of my Oil out of the Hold for Sauce, and ſat down to my Meal, as ſatisfied as an Emperor. But upon taſting my ſeveral Meſſes, though the Eel was rather richer than the ſmaller Fiſhes, yet the others were all ſo good, I gave them the Preference for that Time, and laid by the reſt of the Eel, and of the other Fiſh, till the next Day, when I ſalted them for future ſpending.

I kept now a whole Week or more at home, to look further into the Contents of the Ship, bottle off a Caſk of Madeira, which I found leaking, and to conſume my new Stores of Fiſh, and Fleſh; which being ſomewhat ſtale, when firſt ſalted, I thought would not keep ſo well as

the

the old ones that were on board, I added also some fresh Bread to my Provision, and sweetned more Water, by the aforementioned Method; and when my necessary domestick Affairs were brought under, I then projected a new Voyage.

CHAP. X.

Lays in great Store of Provision; resolves to traverse the Rock; sails for three Weeks, still seeing it only; is sucked under the Rock, and hurried down a Cataract; continues there five Weeks; his Description of the Cavern; his Thoughts and Difficulties; his Arrival at a great Lake; and his landing in the beautiful Country of Graundevolet.

I Had for a long Time wanted to see the other Side of the Rock, and at last resoved to try if I could not coast it quite round; for, as I reasoned with myself, I might possibly find some landing Places, and perhaps a convenient Habitation on Shore. But as I was very uncertain what Time that might take up, I determined on having Provisions, Instruments of divers Kinds, and necessary Utensils in plenty, to guard against Accidents as well as I could. I therefore took another Sea Chest out of the Hold of the Ship, and letting it into my Boat, replenish'd it with a Stock of Wine, Brandy, Oil, Bread, and the like, sufficient for a considerable Voyage. I also filled a large Cask with Water, and took a good Quantity of Salt, to cure what Fish I could take by the Way. I carried two Guns, two Brace of Pistols, and other Arms, with Ammunition proportionable; also an Ax or two, a Saw to

cut Wood, if I ſhould ſee any, and a few other Tools, which might be highly ſerviceable if I could land. To all theſe I added an old Sail, to make a Covering for my Goods and Artillery againſt the Weather. Thus furniſhed and equipped, having ſecur'd my Hatches on board, and every Thing that might ſpoil by wet, I ſet out (with a God's Speed) on my Expedition; committing myſelf once more to Providence and the main Ocean, and proceeding the ſame Way I went the firſt Time.

I did not ſail extraordinary faſt, but frequently fiſhed in proper Places, and caught a great deal; ſalting and drying the beſt of what I took. For three Weeks Time and more, I ſaw no Entrance into the Iſland, as I call it, nor any thing but the ſame unſcalable Rock. This uniform Proſpect gave me ſo little Hopes of landing, that I was almoſt of a mind to have returned again. But, on mature Deliberation, reſolving to go forward a Day or two more, I had not proceeded twenty-four Hours, when, juſt as it was becoming dark, I heard a great Noiſe, as of a Fall of Water; whereupon I propoſed to lie by and wait for Day, to ſee what it was; but, the Stream inſenſibly drawing me on, I ſoon found myſelf in an Eddy; and the Boat drawing forward, beyond all my Power to reſiſt it, I was quickly ſucked under a low Arch, where, if I had not fallen flat in my Boat, having barely Light enough to ſee my Danger, I had undoubtedly been cruſhed to Pieces, or driven over-board. I could perceive the Boat to fall with incredible Violence, as I thought, down a Precipice, and ſuddenly whirled round and round with me; the Water roaring on all Sides, and daſhing againſt the Rock with a moſt amazing Noiſe.

I expected

I expected every Moment my poor little Vessel would be staved against the Rock, and I overwhelm'd with Waters; and for that Reason never once attempted to rise up, or look upon my Peril, till after the Commotion had in some Measure ceased. At length, finding the Perturbation of the Water abate, and as if by Degrees I came into a smoother Stream, I took Courage just to lift up my affrighted Head; but, guess if you can, the Horror which seized me, on finding myself in the blackest of Darkness, unable to perceive the smallest Glimmer of Light.

However, as my Boat seemed to glide easily, I roused myself, and struck a Light; but if I had my Terrors before, what must I have now? I was quite stupified, at the tremendous View of an immense Arch over my Head, to which I could see no Bounds; the Stream itself, as I judged, was about thirty Yards broad, but in some Places wider, in some narrower. It was well for me I happened to have a Tinder-box, or, though I had escaped hitherto, I must have at last perished; for in the narrower Parts of the Stream, where it ran swiftest, there were frequently such Craggs stood out from the Rock, by Reason of the Turnings and Windings, and such Setts of the Current against them, as, could I not have seen to manage my Boat, which I took great Care to keep in the middle of the Stream, must have thrown me on them to my inevitable Destruction.

Happy it was for me also, I was so well victualled, and that I had taken with me two Bottles of Oil, (as I supposed, for I did not imagine I had any more) or I had certainly been lost; not only through Hunger, for I was, to my Guess, five Weeks in the Vault or Cavern, but for want

of Light, which the Oil furnished, and without which all other Conveniences could have been of no Avail to me. I was forced to keep my Lamp always burning; so, not knowing how long my Residence was to be in that Place, or when I should get my Discharge from it, if ever, I was obliged to husband my Oil with the utmost Frugality; and notwithstanding all my Caution, it grew low, and was just spent, in little above half the Time I stayed there.

I had now cut a Piece of my Shirt, for a Wick to my last Drop of Oil, which I twisted and light. I burnt the Oil in my Brass Tobacco-box, which I had fitted pretty well to answer the Purpose. Sitting down, I had many black Thoughts, of what must follow the Loss of my Light, which I considered as near expiring, and that, I feared, for ever. I am here, thought I, like a poor condemned Criminal, who knows his Execution is fixed for such a Day, nay such an Hour, and dies over and over in Imagination, and by the Torture of his Mind, till that Hour comes: That Hour, which he so much dreads! and yet that very Hour which releases him from all further Dread. Thus do I, my last Wick is kindled; my last Drop of Fuel is consuming; and I am every Moment apprehending the Shocks of the Rock, the Suffocation of the Water; and, in short, thinking over my dying Thoughts, till the Snuff of my Lamp throws up its last curling expiring Flame, and then my Quietus will be presently signed, and I released from my tormenting Anxiety. Happy Minute, come then, I only wait for thee!

My Spirits grew so low and feeble upon this, that I had recourse to my Brandy Bottle, to raise them. But as I was just going to take a Sip, I

reflected

reflected that would only encrease Thirst, and therefore it were better to take a little of my white *Madeira*. So, putting my Dram-bottle again into the Chest, I held up one of *Madeira*, as I fancied, to the Lamp, and seeing it was white, for I had red too, I clapped it eagerly to my mouth; when, the first Gulp gave me a greater Refreshment, and more cheered my Heart, than all the other Liquors I had put together could have done, insomuch as I had almost leapt over the Boat's Side for Joy; It is Oil, cry'd I loud, it is Oil. I set it down carefully, with inexpressible Pleasure, and examining the rest of the Bottles I had taken for white *Madeira*, I found two more of those to be filled with Oil. Now, says I, here is the Counter-part of my condemned Prisoners. For let but a Pardon come, though at the Gallows, how soon does he forget he has been an unhappy Villain? And I too have scarce a Notion now, how a Man in my Case could feel such Sorrow as I have, for want of a little Oil.

After my first Transport, I found myself grow serious; reflecting upon the Vigilance of Providence over us poor Creatures, and the various Instances wherein it interposes to save or relieve us, in Cases of the deepest Distress, where our own Foresight, Wisdom, and Power have utterly failed, and when, looking all around, we could discover no Means of Deliverance. And I saw a Train of Circumstances leading to the Incident I have just mentioned, which obliged me to acknowledge the Superintendence of Heaven over even my Affairs. And as the Goodness of God had cared for me thus far, and manifested itself to me now, in rescuing me, as it were, from being swallowed up in Darkness; I had grounds

to hope he intended a compleat Deliverance of me, out of that dismal Abyss, and would cause me yet to praise him in the full Brightness of Day.

A Series of these Meditations brought me, at the End of five Weeks as nearly as I could compute it by my Lamp, to a prodigious Lake of Water, bordered with a grassy Down, about half a Mile wide, of the finest Verdure I had ever seen; this again was flanked with a Wood or Grove, rising like an Amphitheatre, of about the same Breadth; and behind, and above all, appeared the naked Rock, to an immense Height.

CHAP. XI.

His Joy on his Arrival at Land; a Description of the Place; no Inhabitants; wants fresh Water; resides in a Grotto; finds Water; views the Country; carries his Things to the Grotto.

IT is impossible to express my Joy at the Sight of Day once more. I got on the Land as soon as possible, after my Dismission from the Cavern, and kneeling on the Ground, returned hearty Thanks to God for my Deliverance, begging, at the same time, Grace to improve his Mercies, and that I might continue under his Protection, whatever should hereafter befal me, and at last die on my native Soil.

I unloaded my Vessel, as well as I could, and hauled her up on the Shore; and turning her upside down, made her a covering for my Arms and Baggage; I then sat down to contemplate the Place, and eat a most delightful Meal on the Grass, being quite a new Thing to me.

I walked

I walked over the green Swarth to the Wood, with my Gun in my Hand, a Brace of Pistols in my Girdle, and my Cutlass hanging before me. But when I was just entring the Wood, looking behind me, and all around the Plain, is it possible, says I, that so much Art, (for I did not then believe it was natural,) could have been bestowed upon this Place and no Inhabitant in it? Here are neither Buildings, Huts, Castle, nor any living Creature to be seen; it cannot be, says I, that this Place was made for nothing.

I then went a considerable Way into the Wood, and inclined to have gone much further, it being very beautiful, but, on second Thoughts, judged it best to content myself at present with only looking out a safe Retreat, for that Night; for however agreeable the Place then seemed, Darkness was at hand, when every thing about me would have more or less of Horror in it.

The Wood, at its first Entrance, was composed of the most charming flowery Shrubs that can be imagined; each growing upon its own Stem, at so convenient a Distance from the other, that you might fairly pass between them any Way, without the least Incommodity. Behind them grew numberless Trees, somewhat taller, of the greatest Variety of Shapes, Forms, and Verdures, the Eye ever beheld; each also, so far asunder, as was necessary for the spreading of their several Branches, and the Growth of their delicious Fruits, without a Bush, Briar, or Shrub amongst them. Behind these, and still on the higher Ground, grew an infinite Number of very large tall Trees, much loftier than the former; but intermixed with some Underwood, which grew thicker and closer, the nearer you approached the Rock. I made a shift to force my Way

through these, as far as the Rock, which rose as perpendicular as a regular Building, having only here and there Crags and Unevennesses. There was, I observed, a Space all the Way between the Underwood and the Rock, wide enough to drive a Cart in; and indeed I thought it had been left for that Purpose.

I walked along this Passage a good Way; having tied a Rag of the Lining of my Jacket at the Place of my Entrance, to know it again at my coming back, which I intended to be e're it grew dark; but I found so much Pleasure in the Walk, and surveying a small natural Grotto which was in the Rock, that the Day-light forsook me unawares; whereupon I resolved to put off my Return unto the Boat till next Morning, and to take up my Lodging for that Night in the Cave.

I cut down a large Bundle of Underwood, with my Cutlass, sufficient to stop up the Mouth of the Grotto, and laying me down to rest, slept as sound as if I had been on board my Ship; for I never had one Hour's Rest together, since I shot the Gulph, till this. Nature indeed could not have supported itself thus long under much Labour; but as I had nothing to do, but only keep the middle Stream, I began to be as used to guide myself in it, with my Eyes almost closed, and my Senses retired, as a Higler is to drive the Cart to Market in his Sleep.

The next Morning I awaked sweetly refresh'd, and by the Sign of my Rag, found the Way again thro' the Underwood to my Boat. I hoised that up a little, took out some Bread and Cheese, and having eat pretty heartily, I laid me down to drink at the Lake, which looked as clear as Chrystal, expecting a most delicious Draught: But, I had forgot it brought me from the Sea, and my

first

first Gulp almost poisoned me. This was a sore Disappointment, for I knew my Water Cask was nigh emptied; and indeed turning up my Boat again, I drew out all what remained, and drank it, for I was much athirst.

However, I did not despair; I was now so used to God's Providence, and had a Sence of its Operations so rivetted in my Mind, that though the vast Lake of Salt Water was surrounded by an impenetrable Rock, or Barrier of Stone, I rested satisfied, that I should rather find even that yield me a fresh and living Stream, than I should perish for want of it.

With this easy Mind did I travel five or six Miles on the Side of the Lake, and sometimes stepped into the Wood, and walked a little there, till I had gone almost half the Diameter of the Lake, which lay in a circular, or rather an oval Figure. I had then Thoughts of walking back, to be near my Boat and Lodging, for fear I should be again benighted, if I went much further: But, considering I had come past no Water, and possibly I might yet find some, if I went quite round the Lake, I rather chose to take up with a new Lodging, that Night, I than to return: And I did not want for a Supper; having brought out with me more Bread and Cheese than had serv'd for Dinner, the Remainder of which was in the Lining of my Jacket. When it grew darkish, I had some Thoughts of eating, but I considered, as I was then neither hungry nor dry, if I should eat, it would but occasion Drought, and I had nothing to allay that with; so I contented myself for that Night, to lay me down supperless.

In the Morning, I set forward again, upon my Water-search; and hoped to Compass the whole Lake that Day. I had gone about seven

Miles more, when, at a little Distance before me, I perceived a small Hollow or Cut in the Grass, from the Wood to the Lake; thither I hasted with all Speed; and blessed God for the Supply of a fine fresh Rill, which, distilling from several small Clefts in the Rock, had collected itself into one Stream, and cut its Way through the green Sod to the Lake.

I lay down with infinite Pleasure, and swallowed a most chearing Draught of the precious Liquid; and sitting on the Brink, made a good Meal of what I had with me, and then drank again. I had now got five sixths of the Lake's Circumference to go back again to my Boat; for I did not suspect any Passage over the Cavern's Mouth, where I came into the Lake; and I could not without much Trouble consider that if I would have this Water for a constant Supply, I must either come a long Way for it, or fix my Habitation near it. I was just going back again, revolving these uneasy Thoughts in my Breast, when this rose suddenly in my Mind, that if I could possibly get over the Mouth of the Cavern, I should not have above three Miles from my Grotto to the Water. Now as I could not get home that Night, otherwise than by crossing it, and as, if I lost my Labour, I should be but where I was; whereas if I should get over it, it would very much shorten my Journey; I resolved to try whether the Thing was practicable: First, however, looking out for a resting Place, somewhere near my Water, if I should meet with a Disappointment.

I then walked into the Wood, where meeting with no Place of Retreat to my liking, I went to my Rill, and taking another Sup, determined not to leave that Side of the Lake, till Morning;

ing; but having ſome Time to ſpare, I walked about two Miles to view the Inlet of the Lake, and was agreeably ſurprized, juſt over the Mouth of the Cavern to ſee a large ſtone Arch, like a Bridge; as if it had been cut out of the Rock, quite acroſs the Opening; this cheer'd me vaſtly, and puſhing over it, I found a Path that brought me to my Boat before Night.

I then went up to my Grotto, for the third Night, in this moſt delightful Place; and the next Morning early I launched my Boat, and taking my Water Caſk, and a ſmall dipping Bucket with me, I rowed away for the Rill, and returned highly pleaſed with a Sufficiency of Water, whereof I carried a Bucket and a Copper Kettle full up with me to the Grotto. Indeed it was not the leaſt Part of my Satisfaction, that I had this Kettle with me; for though I was in hopes, in my laſt Voyage, I ſhould have come to ſome Shore, where I could have landed, and enjoy'd myſelf over ſome of my Fiſh; and for that Reaſon had taken it, notwithſtanding Things did not turn out juſt as I had ſchemed, yet my Kettle proved the moſt uſeful Piece of Furniture I had.

Having now acquainted myſelf with the Circumference of the Lake, and ſettled a Communication with my Rill, I began to think of commencing Houſekeeper. In order thereunto, I ſet about removing my Goods up to the Grotto. By conſtant Application, in a few Days, I had gotten all thither but my two great Cheſts and my Water Caſk; and how to drag or drive any of thoſe to it, I was entiely at a Loſs. My Water Caſk was of the utmoſt Importance to me, and I had Thoughts ſometimes of ſtopping it cloſe, and rolling it to the Place; but the Aſcent through

the

the Wood to the Grotto was so steep, that, besides the Fear of staving it, which would have been an irreparable Loss, I judged it impossible to accomplish it by Strength; so, with a good deal of Discontent, I determined to remit both that and the Chests to further Consideration.

CHAP. XII.

An Account of the Grotto; a Room added to it; a View of that building; the Author makes a little Cart; also a wet Dock for his Boat; goes in quest of Provision; a Description of divers Fruits and Plants; he brings home a Cart-load of different Sorts; makes Experiments on them; loads his Cart with others; a great Disappointment; makes good Bread; never sees the Sun; the Nature of the Light.

HAVING come to a full Resolution of fixing my Residence at the Grotto, and making that my capital Seat, it is proper to give you some Description of it.

This Grotto then was a full Mile from the Lake, in the Rock which encompassed the Wood. The Entrance was scarcely two Feet wide, and about nine Feet high, rising, from the Height of seven Feet upward, to a Point in the Middle. The Cavity was about fifteen Feet long within, and about five wide. Being obliged to lie lengthwise in it, full six Feet of it were taken up at the further End for my Lodging only; as nothing could stand on the Side of my Bed that would leave me Room to come at it. The remaining nine Feet of the Cave's Length were taken up, first, by my Fire Place, which was on

the

the deepest Side of the Door-way, ranging with my Bed, (which I had set close to the Rock on one Side) and took up near three Feet in length; and my Furniture and Provisions of one Sort or other, so filled up the rest, that I had much ado to creep between them into my Bed.

In the Chest which I had taken for a Seat in the Boat, as aforesaid, upon breaking it open by the Water Side, I found a Mattrass, some Shirts, Shoes, Stockings, and several other useful Things; a small Case of Bottles with Cordials in them, some Instruments of Surgery, Plaisters and Salves: all which, together with a large Quantity of Fish that I had salted, I carried to the Grotto.

My Habitation being thus already over-charged, and as I could not however bear the Thoughts of quitting it, nor of having any of my Goods exposed to the Weather on the Outside, I was naturally bent on contriving how I should encrease my Accommodations. As I had no Prospect of enlarging the Grotto itself, I could conceive no other Way of effecting my Desire, but by the addition of an outer Room. This Thought pleased me very much, so that the next Day I set myself to plant out the Building, and trace the Foundation of it.

I told you before, there was about the Space of a Cart-way between the Wood and the Rock clear; but this Breadth, as I was building for Life, (so I imagined) not appearing to me spacious enough for my new Apartment, I considered how I should extend its Bounds into the Wood. Hereupon I set myself to observe what Trees stood at a proper Distance from my Grotto, that might serve as they stood, with a little Management of hewing and the like, to compose a noble Door-way, Posts, and Supporters; and I found, that upon cutting

cutting down three of the nearest Trees, I should answer my Purpose in this Respect; and that there were several others, about twenty Feet from the Grotto, and running parallel with the Rock, the Situation of which was so happily adapted to my Intention, that I could make them become, as I fancied, an Out-fence for Walls. So I took my Ax, to cut down my nearest Trees; but as I was going to strike, a somewhat different Scheme presented to my Imagination, that altered my Resolution.

In Conformity with this new Plan, I fixed the Height of my intended Ceiling, and sawed off my nearest Trees to that, sloping from the Sides to the Middle, to support cross Beams for the Roof to rest on, and left the Trunks standing, by Way of Pillars, both for the Use and Ornament of the Structure. In short, I worked hard every Day upon my Building for a Month; in which Time I had cut all my Timber into proper Lengths for my Out-walls and Covering; but was at a great Stand, how to fix my side Posts, having no Spade or Mattock, and the Ground almost as hard as Flint; for to be sure it had never been stirred since the Creation. I then thought I had the worst Part of my Job to get over; however, I went on, and having contrived in most of my upright Quarters, to take the Tops of Trees, and leave on the lower Parts of their Cleft, where they began to branch out and divide from the main Stem, I set one of them upright against the Rock, then laid some Ends of my long Ceiling-pieces upon the Cleft within, and laid the other End upon a Tree on the same Side, whose Top I had also sawed off with a proper Cleft; I then went and did the same on the other Side; after this, I laid on a proper Number of cross Beams and tyed all very firmly together with the Bark of young

young Trees, stripped off in long Thongs, which answered that Purpose very well. Thus I proceeded, crossing, joining, and fastening all together, till the whole Roof was so strong and firm, that there was no stirring any Part of it. I then spread it over with small Lop-wood, on which I raised a Ridge of dried Grass and Weeds, very thick, and thatched over the whole with the Leaves of a Tree very much resembling those of a Palm, but much thicker, and not quite so broad. The entire Surface, I might say, was as smooth as a Dye; and so ordered by a gentle Declivity every Way, as to carry off the wet.

Having covered in my Building, I was next to finish and close the Walls of it; the Skeleton of these was composed of Sticks, crossing one another checker-wise and tyed together: To fill up the Voids, I wove upon them the longest and most pliable Twigs of the Under-wood I could find; leaving only a Door-way on one Side, between two Stems of a Tree, which, dividing in the Trunk, at about two Feet from the Ground, grew from thence for the rest of its Height, as if the Branches were a Couple of Trees a little distant from one another, which made a Sort of Stileway to my Room. When this was all done, I temper'd up some Earth by the Lake Side, and mixing it to a dus Consistence with Mud, which I took from the Lake, applyed it as a plaistering in the Manner I divided it into Pieces, which I rolled up of the Size of a Foot-Ball; these Lumps I stuck close by one another on the Lattice, pressing them very hard with my Hands, which forced Part of them quite through the small Twigs, and then I smoothed both Sides with the Back of my Saw, to about the Thickness of five or six Inches, so that by this Means I had a Wall round my

new

new Apartment a Foot thick. This Plaister-work cost me some Time, and a great deal of Labour, as I had a full Mile to go to the Lake for every Load of Stuff, and could carry but little at once, it was so heavy; but there was neither Water for tempering, nor proper Earth to make it with, any nearer. At last, however, I completed my Building in every Respect but a Door, and for this I was forced to use the Lid of my Sea-Chest, which indeed I would have chosen not to apply that Way, but I had nothing else that would do; and there was however this Conveniency, that it had Hinges ready fixed thereon.

I now began to enjoy myself in my new Habitation, like the absolute and sole Lord of the Country; for I had neither seen Man nor Beast since my Arrival, save a few Animals in the Trees like our Squirrels, and some Water Rats about the Lake; but there were several strange Kinds of Birds, I had never before seen, both on the Lake and in the Woods.

That which now troubled me most, was, how to get me Water nearer to me than the Lake, for I had no lesser Vessel than the Cask which held above twenty Gallons; and to bring that up was a Fatigue intolerable. My next Contrivance therefore was this: I told you I had taken my Chest lid to make a Door for an Anti-chamber, as I now began to call it; so I resolved to apply the Body of the Chest also to a Purpose different from that it originally answered. In order to this, I went to the Lake where the Body of the Chest lay, and sawed it through, within about three Inches of the Bottom; of the two Ends, having rounded them as well as I could, I made two Wheels, and with one of the Sides I made

two

two more; I burnt a Hole through the Middle of each; then preparing two Axle-trees, I fastned them, after setting on the Wheels, to the Bottom of the Chest, with the Nails I had drawn out of it. Having finished this Machine, on which I bestowed no small Labour, I was hugely pleased with it, and only wish'd I had a Beast, if it were but an Ass, to draw it; however, that Task I was satisfied to perform myself, since there was no help for it; so I made a good strong Cord out of my fishing Lines, and fixed that to drag it by. When all was thus in readiness, filling my Water-Cask, I bound it thereon, and so brought it to the Grotto, with such Ease, I comparatively, as quite charmed me. Having succeeded so well in the first Essay, I no sooner unloaded, but down went I again with my Cart, or Trucle rather, to the Lake, and brought much thence on it my other Chest, which I had left before.

I had now nothing remaining near the Lake but my Boat, and had half a Mind to try to bring that up too; but having so frequent Occasion for her, to get my Water in, which I used in greater Abundance now than I had done at first, a great Part going to supply my domestick Uses, as well as for drinking, I refrain'd again that, and sought out for a convenient Dock to stow it in, as a Preservative against Wind and Weather, which I soon after effected; for having pitched upon a swampy Place, overgrown with a Sort of long Flags or Reeds, I soon cut a Trench from the Lake, with a Sort of Spade or Board that I had chopp'd and sharpen'd for that Use.

Thus having stowed my Boat, and looked over all my Goods, and sorted them, and taken a Survey of my Provisions, I found I must soon be in want of the last, if I did not forthwith procure

procure a Supply; for though I had victualled so well at setting out, yet, had it not been for a great Quantity of Fish I took and salted in my Passage to the Gulph, I had been to seek for Food much sooner. Hereupon, I thought it highly prudent to look out before I really wanted.

With this Resolution, I accoutred myself, as in my first Walk, with my Instruments and Arms. But instead of travelling the Lake Side, I went along the Wood, and therein found great Plenty of divers Kinds of Fruits; though I could scarce perswade myself to taste, or try the Effects of them, being so much unlike our own, or any I had seen elsewhere. I observed amongst the Shrubs Abundance of a Fruit, or whatever else you may call it, which grew like a Ram's Horn; sharp at the Point next the Twig it was fastened to, and circling round and round, one Fold upon another, which gradually increased to the Size of my Wrist in the Middle, and then as gradually decreased, till it terminated in a Point again at the contrary Extream; all which Spiral, if it were fairly extended in Length, might be a Yard or an Ell long. I surveyed this strange Vegetable very attentively; it had a Rind, or Crust, which I could not break with my Hand; but taking my Knife, and making an opening therewith in the Shell, there issued out a Sort of milky Liquor in great Quantity, to at least a Pint and half, which, having tasted, I found as sweet as Honey, and very pleasant. However, I could not perswade myself any more than just to taste it. I then found on the large Trees several Kinds of Fruits, like Pears or Quinces, but most of them exceeding hard and rough, and quite disagreeable: so I quitted my Hopes of them.

About three Miles from my Grotto, I met with

with a large Space of Ground full of a low Plant, growing only with a single woody Stalk half a Foot high, and from thence issued a round Head, about a Foot or ten Inches Diameter, but quite flat, about three Qurters of an Inch thick, and just like a Cream Cheese, standing upon its Edge. These grew so close together, that, upon the least Wind stirring, their Heads rattled against each other very musically; for tho' the Stalks were so very strong, that they would not easily either bend or break; yet the fanning of the Wind upon the broad Heads twisting the Stalks, so as to let the Heads strike each other, they made a most agreeable Sound.

I stood some time admiring this Shrub, and then cutting up one of them, I found it weighed about two Pounds; they had a tough green Rind or Covering, very smooth, and the Inside full of a stringy Pulp, quite white. In short, I made divers other Trials of Berries, Roots, Herbs, and what else I could find, but received little Satisfaction from any of them, for fear of bad Qualities. I returned back ruminating on what Things I had seen, resolving to take my Cart the next Walk, and bring it home loaded with different Kinds of them, in order to make my Trials thereof at Leisure. But my Cart being too flat, and wanting Sides, I considered it would carry very little, and that what it would otherwise bear, on that Account, must tumble and roll off; so I made a Fire, and turned Smith; for with a great deal to do, breaking off the Wards of a large Key I had; and making it red hot, I by Degrees fashioned it into a Kind of Spindle, and therewith making Holes quite round the Bottom of my Cart, in them I stuck up Sticks, about two Feet high, that I had taper'd at the End to fit them.

Having

Having thus qualified my Cart for a Load, I proceeded with it to the Wood, and cutting a small Quantity of each Species of Green, Berry, Fruit, and Flower, that I could find, and packing them severally in Parcels, I returned at Night heavy laden, and held a Council with myself, what Use they could most properly be applied to.

I had amongst my Goods, as I said, a Copper Kettle, which held about a Gallon; this I set over my Fire, and boiled something by Turns of every Sort in it, watching all the while, and with a Stick stirring and raising up one Thing and then another, to feel when they were boiled tender; but of upwards of twenty Greens which I thus dressed, only one proved eatable, all the rest becoming more stringy, tough, and insipid, for the cooking. The one I have excepted, was a round, thick, woolly leafed Plant, which boiled tender, and tasted as well as Spinage; I therefore preserved some Leaves of this, to know it again by, and, for Distinction, called it by the Name of that Herb.

I then began upon my Fruits, of the Pear and Quince kind, at least eight different Sorts, but I found I could make nothing of them, for they were most of them as rough and crabbed after stewing as before; so I laid them all aside. Lastly, I boiled my Ram's-horn and Cream-cheese, as I called them, together. Upon tasting the latter of these, it was become so watery and insipid, I laid it aside as useless. I then cut the other, and tasted the Juice, which proved so exceeding pleasant, that I took a large Gulp or two of it, and tossed it into the Kettle again.

Having now gone through the several Kinds of my Exoticks, I had a Mind to re-examine them after cooling; but could make nothing of any of

my

my Greens but the Spinage. I tried ſeveral Berries and Nuts too; but, ſave a few Sorts of Nuts, they were all very taſteleſs. Then I began to review the Fruits, and could find but two Sorts, that I had any the leaſt Hopes from. I then laid the beſt by, and threw the others away. After this Proceſs, which took me up near a whole Day, and clearing my Houſe of Good-for-nothings, I returned to re-examine my Cheeſe, that was grown cold, and was now ſo dry and hard I could not get my Teeth into it; upon which I was going to ſkim it away out of my Grotto, ſaying, go thou worthleſs, (for I always ſpoke aloud my Thoughts to myſelf:) I ſay, I was juſt diſpatching it, when I check'd my Hand, and, as I could make no Impreſſion with my Teeth, had a mind to try what my Knife could do. Accordingly I began at the Edge of the Quarter, for I had boiled but a Quarter of it; but the Rind was grown ſo hard and brittle, that my Knife ſlipping, and raking along the cut Edge of it, ſcratched off ſome Powder as white as poſſible; I then ſcraped it backward and forward ſome time, till I found it would all ſcrape away in this Powder, except the Rind; upon which I laid it aſide again for further Experiment.

During this Review, my Kettle and Ram's-horn had been boiling, till hearing it blubber very loud, and ſeeing there was but little Liquor in it, I whipped it off the Fire, for fear of burning its Bottom, but took no further notice of it, till about two Hours after; when returning to the Grotto, I went to waſh out my Kettle, but could ſcarce get my Ram's-horn from the Bottom; and when I did, it brought up with it a Sort of pitchy Subſtance, though not ſo black, and ſeveral gummy Threads hanging to it, drawn out to a great

Length.

Length. I wondered at this, and thought the Shell of the Ram's-horn had melted, or ſome ſuch Thing; till venturing to put a little of the Stuff on my Tongue, it proved, to my thinking, as good Treacle as I had ever taſted.

This new Diſcovery pleaſed me very much. I ſcraped all the ſweet Thing up, and laid it near my Grotto, in a large Leaf of one of the Trees, (about two Feet long, and broad in Proportion) to prevent it running about. In getting this Curioſity out of my Kettle, I found in it a ſmall Piece of my Cheeſe, which I ſuppoſe had been broke off in ſtirring; and biting it, for it was ſoft enough, I think it was the moſt luſcious and delicate Morſel I ever put into my Lips. This unexpected good Fortune put me on trying the beſt of my Pears again; ſo ſetting on my Kettle, with very little Water, and putting ſome of my Treacle into it, and two of the beſt Pears quarter'd, I found, upon a little boiling, they alſo became an excellent Dainty.

Having ſucceeded ſo well, I was quite ripe for another Jouney with my Cart: which I accordingly undertook, taking my Rout over the Stone Bridge, to ſee what the other Side of the Lake produced. In travelling thro' the Trees, I met, amongſt other Things, with Abundance of large Gourds, which, climbing the Trees, diſplaid their Fruit to the Height of twenty or thirty Feet above the Ground. I cut a great many of theſe, and ſome very large ones, of different Hues and Forms; which, of themſelves, making a great Load, with ſome few new Sorts of Berries and Greens, was the gathering of that Day. But I muſt tell you, I was almoſt foiled in getting them home; for coming to my Stone-bridge, it roſe ſo ſteep, and was ſo much ruggeder than the

the Grass or Wood-ground, that I was at a Set upon the first Entrance, and terribly afraid I should either break my Wheels, or pull of my Axle-trees. Hereupon, I was forced to unload, and carry my Cargoe over in my Arms to the other Side of the Bridge; whither having then, with less Fear but much Caution, drawn my Cart, I loaded again, and got safe home.

I was mightily pleased with the Acquisitions of this Journey, for now, thinks I, I shall have several convenient Family Utensils; so spent the next Day or two in scooping my Gourds and cleaning away the Pulp. When I had done this, finding the Rinds to be very weak and yielding, I made a good Fire, and setting them round it at a moderate Distance, to dry, I went about something else without Doors. But alas! my Hopes were ill founded; for coming home to turn my Gourds, and see how dry they were, I found them all warp'd, and turn'd into a Variety of uncouth Shapes. This put me to a stand; but however, I recovered some Pieces of them for use, as the bottom Parts of most of them, after paring away the Sides, would hold something, though they by no Means answered my first Purpose.

Well, thinks I, what if I have lost my Gourds? I have gained Experience; I will dry them next Time with the Guts in, and having stiffened their Rinds, in their proper Dimensions, then try to cleanse them. So next Morning, for I was very eager at it, I set out with my Cart for another Load; and having handed them over the Bridge, got safe with them to the Grotto. These by proper Management proved exceedingly valuable to me, answering, in one Way or other, the several

ral Uses of Plates, Bottles, Pans, and divers other Vessels.

I now got a large Quantity of the vegetable Ram's-horn, and filled a great many of my Gourds with the Treacle it yielded; I also boiled and dried a large Parcel of my Cheeses, and hung them up for Use: For I had now for some Time made all my Bread of the latter, scraping and bruising the Flower, and mixing it with my Treacle and Water; and this, indeed, made such a sweet and nourishing Bread, that I could even have lived wholly upon it: But I afterwards very much improved it, by putting the milky Juice of the Ram's-horn, unboiled, to my Flower, in a small Quantity, and then baking it on the Hearth, covered over with Embers: This detracted nothing from the Sweetness and Mellowness of my Bread, but made it much lighter than the Treacle alone would have done.

Finding there was no Fear of starving, but so far from it, that from Day to Day I found out something new to add to my Repasts, either in Substantials or by Way of Desart, I set me down very well contented with my Condition. I had nothing to do, but to lay up Store against Sickness, and the dark Weather; which last I expected would soon be upon me, as the Days were now exceeding short. Indeed, tho' I had now been here six Months, I had never seen the Sun since I first entered the Gulph; and tho' there was very little Rain, and but few Clouds, yet the brightest Day-light never exceeded that of half an Hour after Sunset, in the Summer-time in *England*, and little more than just redned the Sky. For the first part of my Time here, there was but little, if any, Difference between Day and Night; but afterwards, what I might call the

Night,

Night, or lesser Degree of Light, took up more Hours than the greater, and went on gradually encreasing as to Time, so that I perceived total Darkness approached, such as I had on board my Ship the Year before.

CHAP. XIII.

The Author lays in a Store against the dark Weather; hears Voices; his Thoughts thereon; persuades himself it was a Dream; hears them again; determines to see if any one lodged in the Rock; is satisfied there is nobody; Observations on what he saw; finds a strong Weed like Whipcord; makes a drag Net, lengthens it; catches a Monster; its Description; makes Oil of it.

I Had now well stored my Grotto with all Sorts of Winter Provisions; and feeling the Weather grow very cold, I expected, and waited patiently for, the total Darkness. I went little abroad, and employed myself within Doors, endeavouring to fence against the approaching Extremity of the Cold. For this Purpose, I prepared a Quantity of Rushes; which being very dry, I spread them smoothly on the Floor of my Bedchamber, a good Thickness, and over them I laid my Matrass. Then, I made a double Sheet of the Boat's Awning, or Sail, that I had brought to cover my Goods; and having sewered together several of the Jackets and Cloaths I found in the Chest, of them I made a Coverlid; so that I lay very commodiously, and made very long Nights of it, now the dark Season was set in.

As I lay awake one Night, or Day, I know not whether, I very plainly heard the Sound of

ſeveral human Voices, and ſometimes very loud; but tho' I could eaſily diſtinguiſh the Articulations, I could not underſtand the leaſt Word that was ſaid; nor did the Voices ſeem at all to me like ſuch as I had any where heard before, but much ſofter and more muſical. This ſtartled me, and I roſe immediately, ſlipping on my Cloaths, and taking my Gun in my Hand, (which I always kept charged, being my conſtant travelling Companion) and my Cutlaſs. Thus equipp'd, I walked into my Anti-chamber, where I heard the Voices much plainer, till, after ſome little Time, they by Degrees died quite away. After watching here, and hearkening a good while, hearing nothing, I walked back into the Grotto, and laid me down again on my Bed. I was inclined to open the Door of my Anti-chamber, but I own I was afraid; beſide, I conſidered, that if I did, I could diſcover nothing at any Diſtance, by reaſon of the thick and gloomy Wood that incloſed me.

I had a thouſand different Surmiſes about the Meaning of this odd Incident; and could not conceive how any human Creature ſhould be in my Kingdom (as I called it) but myſelf, and I never yet ſee them, or any Trace of their Habitation. But then again I reflected, that though I had ſurrounded the whole Lake, yet I had not traced the out Bounds of the Wood, next the Rock, where there might be innumerable Grottos like mine; nay perhaps ſome as ſpacious as that I had ſailed through to the Lake; and that though I had not perceived it yet, this beautiful Spot might be very well peopled. But, ſays I again, if there be any ſuch Beings as I am fancying here, ſurely they don't ſkulk in their Dens, like ſavage Beaſts, by Day-light, and only patrole for Prey by Night; if ſo, I ſhall probably become a delicious Morſel

for

for them e're long, if they meet with me. This kept me still more within Doors than before, and I hadly ever stirred out but for Water or Firing. At length, hearing no more Voices, or seeing any one, I began to be more composed in my Mind, and at last grew persuaded, it was all a meer Delusion, and only a Fancy of mine, without any real Foundation; and sometimes, though I was sure I was fully awake when I heard them, I persuaded myself I had rose in my Sleep, upon a Dream of Voices; and recollected with myself the various Stories I had heard, when a Boy, of walking in one's Sleep, and the surprizing Effects of it; so the whole Notion was now blown over.

I had not enjoy'd my Tranquillity above a Week, before my Fears were roused afresh, hearing the same Sound of Voices, twice the same Night; but not many Minutes at a Time. What gave me most Pain, was, that they were at such a Distance, as I judged by the Languor of the Sound, that if I had opened my Door, I could not have seen the Utterers through the Trees, and I was resolved not to venture out; but then I determined, if they should come again, any thing near my Grotto, to open the Door, see who they were, and stand upon my Defence, whatever came of it: For, says I, my Entrance is so narrow and high, that more than one can't come at a time; and I can with Ease dispatch twenty of them before they can secure me, if they should be Savages; but if they prove sensible human Creatures, it will be a great Benefit to me, to join myself to their Society. Thus had I formed my Scheme, but I heard no more of them, for a great while; so that at length beginning to grow ashamed of my Fears, I became tranquil again.

The Day now returning, and with it my Labours, I applied to my usual Callings; but my Mind run strangely upon viewing the Rock quite round, that is, the whole Circuit of my Dominions: for, thinks I, there may possibly be an Outlet through the Rock into some other Country, from whence the Persons I heard may come. As soon therefore as the Days grew towards the longest, I prepared for my Progress. Having lived so well at home since my Settlement, I did not care to trust only to what I could pick up in the Woods, for my Subsistance during this Journey, which would not only take up Time in procuring, but perhaps not agree with me; so I resolved to carry a Supply with me, proportionate to the Length of my Perambulation. Hereupon considering, that though my Walk round the Lake was finished in two Days, yet as I now intended to go round by the Rock, the Way would be much longer, and perhaps more troublesome than that was; remembring also my Journey with *Glanlipze* in *Africa*, and how much I complained of the Fruits we carried for our Subsistance; these Circumstances, I say, laying together, I resolved to load the Cart with a Variety of Food, Bread and Fruits especially; and draw that with me.

Thus provided I sallied forth with great Chearfulness, and proceeded in the main easily; though in some Places I was forced to make Way with my Hatchet, the Ground was so over-run with Underwood. I very narrowly view'd the Rock as I went, Bottom and Sides, all the Way, but could see nothing like a Passage through it; or indeed any more than one Opening, or Inlet, which I entered for about thirty Yards; but it was

not

not above three Feet wide, and terminated in the solid Rock.

After some Days travel, (making all the Observations I could on the several Plants, Shrubs, and Trees, which I met with, particularly, where any of these occur'd to me entirely new) finding myself a little faintish, I had a mind for a Sup of Ram's-horn Juice; so I cut me one; but, upon opening it, found therein only a pithy Pulp, and no Ways fit to taste. I supposed by this, I was too early for the Milk; it being three Months later, the last Year, when I cut them. Hereon, seeing one upon another Shrub, which, by its rusty Colour, I judged might have hung all the Winter, I opened that, and found it full of Milk; but, putting some of it into my Mouth, it was as sour as any Vinegar I ever tasted in my Life. So thinks I, and said so too, for, as I told you before, I always spoke out; here's Sauce for something when I want it; and this gave me a Hint to store myself with these Gourds, to hang by for Vinegar the next Winter.

By this Time I had come almost to my Rill; when I enter'd upon a large Plat of Ground, miserably over-run with Weeds, matted together very thick. These choaked up my Wheels in such a Manner, that I could neither free them with my Hands, nor get either backwards or forwards, they binding my Cart down like so many Cords; so that I was oblig'd to cut my Way back again, with my Hatchet, and take a sweep round in the Wood, on the Outside of these Weeds.

In all my Life I never saw any Thing of its Size, for it was no thicker than a Whipcord, so strong as this Weed; and what raised my Wonder, was the Length of it, for I drew out Pieces of it near fifty Feet long; and even they were bro-

ken at the End, so that it might be as long again for ought I know; for it was so matted, and twisted together, that it was a great Trial of Patience to untangle it; but that which was driest, and to me looked the rottenest and weakest, I found to be much the strongest. Upon Examination of its Parts, I discovered it to be composed of an infinite Number of small Threads, spirally overlaying and infolding one another.

As I saw but few Things that I could not find a use for, so this I perceived would serve all the common Purposes of Packthread; a Thing I was often in want of. This inclined me to take a Load of it home with me. Indeed the Difficulty of getting a Quantity in the Condition I desired it, puzzled me a little; for, says I, if I cut up a good deal of it with my Hatchet, as I first design'd, I shall only have small Lengths, good for little, and to get it in Pieces of any considerable Length, so as to be of Service, will require much Time and Labour; but reflecting how much I needed it, and of what Benefit it would be, I resolved to make a Trial of what I could do. So, without more Hesitation, I went to Work, and cutting a Fibre close to its Root, I extricated that Thread from all its Windings, just as one does an entangled Whipcord. When I had thus disengaged a sufficient Length, I cut that off; and repeating the like Operation, in about three Hours Time, but with no little Toil, I made up my Load of different Lengths, just to my Liking. Having finished this Task, I filled the Gourd, brought for that Purpose, with Water; and having first viewed the whole remaining Part of the Rock, I returned over the Stone Bridge home again.

This

This Journey, though it took me up several Days, and was attended with some Fatigue, had yet given me great Satisfaction; for now I was persuaded I could not have one Rival, or Enemy, to fear in my whole Dominions. And from the Impossibility, as I suppos'd, of there being any, or of the Ingress of any, unless by the same Passage I enter'd at, and by which I was well assured they could never return, I grew contented; and blamed myself for the Folly of my imaginary Voices, as I called them then, and took it for a Distemper of the Fancy only.

The next Day I looked over my Load of Matweed, having given it that Name, and separated the different Lengths from each other. I then found I had several Pieces between forty and fifty Feet long, of which I resolved to get a good Number more, to make me a Drag-net, that I might try for some Fish in the Lake. A Day or two after, therefore, I brought home another Load of it. Then I picked out a smooth level Spot upon the green Swarth, and having prepared a great Number of short wooden Pegs, I strained a Line of the Matweed, about ten Feet long, tying it at each End to a Peg, and struck a Row of Pegs along by that Line, about two Inches asunder; I next strained another Line, of the same Length, parallel to that, at the Distance of forty Feet from it, and struck Pegs thereby, corresponding to the former Row; and from each Peg on one Side, to the opposite Peg on the other, I tied a like Length of my Matline, quite through the whole Number of Pegs; when the Work looked like the Inside of an Harpsichord; I afterwards drove Pegs, in like Manner, along the whole Length of the two outermost longer Lines, and tied shorter Lines to them: so that the whole

Affair then represented the Squares of a Racket; the Corners of each of which Squares, I tied very tight with smaller Pieces of the Line, till I had formed a compleat Net of forty Feet long and ten wide.

When I had finished my Net, as I thought, I wrapped several Stones in Rags, and fastened them to the Bottom to sink it, and some of the smallest, unscooped, dry Gourds to the Top, to keep that Part boyant. I now longed to begin my new Trade, and carried the Net to my Boat, with that Intention; but, after two or three Hauls, I found it would not answer for want of Length; (though, by Chance, I caught a blackish Fish without Scales, a little bigger than Whiting, but much longer, which stuck by the Gills to it;) so I left the Net in the Boat, resolving to make an Addition to it with all Speed, and returning to my Grotto, I supped on the Fish I had taken, and considered how to pursue my Enterprize with better Effect.

I provided me with another large Parcel of Line; and having brought two more Lengths to Perfection, I joined all together, and fixing one End on Shore, by a Pole I had cut for that Purpose, I launched my Boat, with the other End in it, taking a Sweep the Length of my Net, round to my Stick again; and getting on Shore, hauled up my Net by both Ends together. I found now I had mended my Instrument, and taken a proper Way of applying it; for by this Means, in five Hauls, I caught about sixteen Fish, of three or four different Sorts, and one Shell-fish, almost like a Lobster, but without great Claws, and with a very small short Tail: which made me think, as the Body was thrice as long as a Lobster's in Proportion, that it did not swim backwards,

wards, like that Creature, but only crawled forwards, (it having Lobster-like Legs, but much shorter and stronger) and that the Legs all standing so forward; its Tail was, by its Motion, to keep the hinder Part of the Body from dragging upon the Ground, as I observed it did when the Creature walked on Land; it then frequently slacking its short Tail.

These Fish made me rich in Provisions. Some of them I eat fresh, and the Remainder I salted down. But of all the Kinds, my Lobster was the most delicious Food, and made me almost three Meals.

Thus finding there were Fish to be had, tho' my present Tackle seemed suitable enough to my Family, yet could I not rest, till I had improved my Fishery, by enlarging my Net: For, as it was, even with my late Addition, I must either sweep little or no Compass of Ground, or it would have no Bag behind me. Upon this I set to work, and shortly doubled the Dimensions of it. I had then a Mind to try it at the Mouth of my Rill; so taking it with me the next Time I crossed the Lake for Water, and fastening it to my Pole, close by the right Side of the Rill, I swept a long Compass round to the Left, and closing the Ends, attempted to draw up in the hollow Cut of the Rill. But by the Time I had gathered up two thirds of the Net, I felt a Resistance that quite amazed me. In short, I was not able to stand against the Force I felt. Whereupon, sitting down in the Rill, and clapping my Feet to the two Sides of it, I exerted all my Strength, till finally I became Conqueror, and brought up so shocking a Monster, that I was just rising to run for my Life on the Sight of it. But recollecting that the Creature was hampered, and could not

make so much Resistance on the Land as in the Water, I ventured to drag the Net up as far from the Rill as my Strength and Breath would permit me; and then running to the Boat for my Gun, I returned to the Net, to examine my Prize. Indeed I had not instantly Resolution enough to survey it; and when at length I assumed Courage enough to do so, I could not perfectly distinguish the Parts, they were so discomposed; but taking hold of one End of the Net I endeavoured to disentangle the Thing, and then drawing the Net away, a most surprising Sight presented itself: The Creature reared upright, about three Feet high, covered all over with long black shaggy Hair, like a Bear, which hung down from his Head and Neck quite along his Back and Sides. He had two Fins, very broad and large, which, as he stood erect, looked like Arms, and those he waved and whirled about with incredible Velocity; and though I wondered at first at it, I found afterwards, it was the Motion of these Fins that kept him upright; for I perceived when they ceased their Motion, he fell flat on his Belly. He had two very large Feet, which he stood upon, but could not run, and but barely walk on them; which made me in the less haste to dispatch him; and after he had stood upon his Feet about four Minutes, clapping his Fins to his Sides, he fell upon his Belly.

When I found he could not attack me, I was moving closer to him; but, upon sight of my stirring, up he rose again, and whirled his Fins about as before, so long as he stood. And now I view'd him round, and found he had no Tail at all; and that his hinder Fins, or Feet very much resembled a large Frog's, but were at least ten Inches broad, and eighteen long, from Heel

to

to Toe; and his Legs were so short, that when he stood upright, his Breech bore upon the Ground. His Belly, which he kept towards me, was of an Ash-colour, and very Broad, as was also his Breast. His Eyes were small and blue, with a large black Sight in the Middle, and rather of an oval than round make. He had a long Snout like a Boar, and vast Teeth. Thus having survey'd him near half an Hour living, I made him rise up once more and shot him in the Breast. He fell, and giving a loud Howl, or Groan, expired.

I had then Time to see what else I had caught; and turning over the Net, found a few of the same Fish I had taken before, and some others of a flattish make, and one little Lump of Flesh unform'd: which last, by all I could make of it, seemed to be either a Spawn or young one that I had shot.

The great Creature was so heavy, I was afraid I must have cut him in Pieces to get him to the Boat: but with much ado, having stowed the rest, I tumbled him on board. I then filled my Water-cask, and rowed homewards. Being got to Land, I was obliged to bring down my Cart, to carry my great Beast-Fish, as I termed him, up to the Grotto. When I had got him thither, I had a Notion of first tasting, and then, if I liked his Flesh, of salting him down, and drying him; so, having flead him, and taken out the Guts and Intrails, I broiled a Piece of him; but it made such a Blaze, that most of the Fat run into the Fire, and the Flesh prov'd so dry and rank, that I could no Ways endure it.

I then began to be sorry I had taken so much Pains for no Profit, and had endangered my Net into the Bargain, (for that had got a Crack or

two

two in the Scuffle) and was thinking to throw away my large, but worthless, Acquisition.

However, as I was now prone to weighing all Things, before I threw it away, I resolved to consider a little; whereupon I changed my Mind. Says I, here is a good warm Skin, which, when dry, will make me a rare Cushion. Again, I have for a long while had no Light beside that of the Day; but now, as this Beast's Fat makes such a Blaze in the Fire, and issues in so great a Quantity from such a small Piece as I broiled, why may not I boil a good Tallow or Oil out of it? and if I can, I have not made so bad a Hand of my Time as I thought for.

In short, I went immediately to work upon this Subject, (for I never let a Project cool after I had once started it) and boiled as much of the Flesh as the Kettle would hold; and letting it stand to cool, I found it a very good Oil for burning; though, I confess, I thought it would rather have made Tallow. This Success quickened my Industry; and I repeated the Operation, till I got about ten Quarts of this Stuff, which very well rewarded my Labour. After I had extracted as much Oil as I could from the Beast-Fish, the Creature having strongly impress'd my Imagination, I conceived a new Fancy in relation to it; and that was, having heard him make a deep howling Groan at his Death, I endeavoured to persuade myself, and at last verily believed, that the Voices I had so often heard, in the dark Weather, proceeded from Numbers of these Creatures, diverting themselves in the Lake, or sporting together on the Shore: And this Thought, in its Turn, contributed to ease my Apprehensions in that Respect.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

The Author passes the Summer pleasantly; hears the Voices in the Winter; ventures out; sees a strange Sight on the Lake; his Uneasiness at it; his Dream; Soliloquy; hears the Voices again, and perceives a great Shock on his Building; takes up a beautiful Woman; he thinks her dead, but recovers her; a Description of her; she stays with him.

I Passed the Summer, (tho' I had never yet seen the Sun's Body) very much to my Satisfaction; partly, in the Work I have been describing, (for I had taken two more of the Beast Fish, and had a great quantity of Oil from'em;) partly, in building me a Chimney in my Antichamber, of Mud and Earth burnt on my own Hearth into a sort of Brick; in making a Window at one End of the abovesaid Chamber, to let in what little Light would come through the Trees, when I did not choose to open my Door; in moulding an earthen Lamp for my Oil; and, finally, in providing and laying in Stores, fresh and salt, (for I had now cured and dryed many more Fish) against Winter. These, I say, were my Summer Employments, at Home, intermix'd with many agreeable Excursions. But now, the Winter coming on, and the Days growing very short, or indeed there being no Day, properly speaking, but a kind of Twilight, I kept mostly in my Habitation; tho' not so much as I had done the Winter before, when I had no Light within Doors, and slept, or at least lay still, great part of my Time; for now my Lamp was never out. I also turned two of my Beast-fish Skins into a Rugg to cover my Bed, and the third into a Cushion,

Cushion, which I always sat upon, and a very soft and warm Cushion it made. All this together rendered my life very easy, yea even comfortable.

An indifferent Person would now be apt to ask, what would this man desire more than he had? To this I answer, that I was contented, while my Condition was such as I have been describing; but a little while after the Darkness, or Twilight, came on, I frequently heard the Voices again; sometimes a few only at a time, as it seem'd, and then again in great Numbers. This threw me into new Fears, and I became as uneasy as ever, even to the degree of growing quite Melancholy; tho', otherwise, I never received the least Injury from any thing. I foolishly attempted several Times, by looking out of my Window, to discover what these odd Sounds proceeded from; tho' I knew it was too dark to see any thing there.

I was now fully convinc'd, by a more deliberate Attention to 'em, that they could not be uttered by the Beast-fish, as I had afore conjectured, but only by Beings capable of articulate Speech: But then, what, or where they were, it galled me to be ignorant of.

At length one Night or Day, I can't say which, hearing the Voices very distinctly, and praying very earnestly, to be either delivered from the uncertainty they had put me under, or to have them removed from me, I took Courage, and arming myself with Gun, Pistols, and Cutlass, I went out of my Grotto, and crept down the Wood. I then heard them plainer than before, and was able to judge from what point of the Compass they proceeded. Hereupon I went forward towards the Sound, till I came to the Verge

of

of the Wood, where I could ſee the Lake very well by the dazzle of the Water. Thereon, as I thought, I beheld a Fleet of Boats, covering a large Compaſs, and not far from the Bridge. I was ſhock'd hereat beyond Expreſſion. I could not conceive where they came from, or whither they would go; but ſuppoſed there muſt be ſome other Paſſage to the Lake, than I had found in my Voyage thro' the Cavern, and that for certain they came that Way, and from ſome Place, of which, as yet, I had no manner of Knowledge.

Whilſt I was entertaining myſelf with this Speculation, I heard the People in the Boats laughing and talking very merrily; tho' I was too diſtant to diſtinguiſh the Words. I diſcern'd ſoon after all the Boats (as I ſtill ſuppoſed 'em) draw up, and puſh for the Bridge; preſently after, tho' I was ſure no Boat entered the Arch, I ſaw a Multitude of People, on the oppoſite Shore all marching towards the Bridge; and what was the ſtrangeſt of all, there was not the leaſt Sign of a Boat now left upon the whole Lake. I then was in a greater Conſternation than before; but was ſtil, much more ſo, when I ſaw the whole Poſſe of People, that as I have juſt ſaid were marching towards the Bridge, coming over it to my ſide of the Lake. At this my Heart failed, and I was juſt going to run to my Grotto for Shelter; but taking one look more, I plainly diſcovered, that the People, leaping one after another from the Top of the Bridge, as if into the Water, and then riſing again, flew in a long Train over the Lake, the lengthways of it, quite out of my Sight, laughing, hollowing and ſporting together: ſo that looking back again

to

to the Bridge, and on the Lake, I could neither see Person, nor Boat, nor any thing else, nor hear the least Noise or Stir afterwards for that Time.

I returned to my Grotto brim full of this amazing Adventure; bemoaning my Misfortune, in being at a Place, where I was like to remain ignorant of what was doing about me. For says I, if I am in a Land of Spirits, as now I have little room to doubt, there is no guarding against them. I am never safe, even in my Grotto; for that can be no Security against such Beings as can sail on the Water in no Boats, and fly in the Air on no Wings, as the Case now appears to me, who can be here and there, and wherever they please. What a miserable State, I say, am I fallen to? I should have been glad to have had human Converse, and to have found Inhabitants in this Place; but there being none, as I supposed hitherto, I contented myself with thinking, I was at least safe from all those Evils, Mankind, in Society, are obnoxious to: But now, what may be the Consequence of the next Hour I know not; nay, I am not able to say, but whilst I speak, and show my Discontent, they may at a distance conceive my Thoughts, and be hatching Revenge against me for my dislike of them.

The Pressure of my Spirits inclining me to Repose, I laid me down, but could get no Rest; nor could all my most serious Thoughts, even of the Almighty Providence, give me Relief under my present Anxiety: And all this was only from my State of Uncertainty, concerning the Reality of what I had heard and seen; and from the Earnestness with which I coveted a satisfactory Knowledge of those Beings who had just taken their Flight from me.

I really

I really believe, the fiercest wild Beast, or the most savage of Mankind that had met me, and put me upon my Defence, would not have given me half the trouble that then lay upon me; and the more, for that I had no seeming Possibility of ever being rid of my Apprehensions: So, finding I could not sleep, I got up again; but as I could not fly from myself, all the Art I could use with myself, was but in vain to obtain me any Quiet.

In the Height of my Distress I had Recourse to Prayer, with no small Benefit; begging, that if it pleased not the Almighty Power to remove the Object of my Fears, at least to resolve my Doubts about them, and to render them rather helpful than hurtful to me. I hereupon, as I always did on such Occasions, found myself much more placid and easy, and began to hope the best, 'till I had almost persuaded myself that I was out of Danger; and then laying myself down, I rested very sweetly, 'till I was awakened by the Impulse of the following Dream.

Methought I was in *Cornwall* at my Wife's Aunt's; and enquiring after her and my Children, the old Gentlewoman inform'd me, both my Wife and Children had been dead some time, and that my Wife, before her Departure desired her (that is her Aunt) immediately upon my Arrival to tell me, she was only gone to the Lake, where I should be sure to see her, and be happy with her ever after. I then, as I fancied, ran to the Lake, to find her. In my Passage she stopped me, crying, whither so fast *Peter*? I am your Wife, your *Patty*. Methought I did not know her, she was so altered; but observing her Voice, and looking more wistfully at her, she appeared to me, as the most beautiful Creature

I ever

I ever beheld. I then went to seize her in my Arms; but the hurry of my Spirits awakened me.

When I got up, I kept at home, not caring even to look out at my Door. My Dream ran strangely in my Head, and I had now nothing but *Patty* in my Mind. Oh! cries I, how happy could I be with her, though I had only her in this Solitude. Oh! that this was but a Reality, and not a Dream. And indeed, though it was but a Dream, I could scarce refrain from running to the Lake to meet my *Patty*. But then I checked my Folly, and reasoned myself into some Degree of Temper again. However, I could not forbear crying out, What! nobody to converse with, nobody to assist, comfort, or counsel me! this is a melancholy Situation indeed. Thus I run on lamenting, till I was almost weary; when, on a sudden, I again heard the Voices, Hark! says I, here they come again. Well, I am now resolved to face them; come Life, come Death. It is not to be alone I thus dread; but to have Company about me, and not know who or what; is Death to me, worse than I can suffer from them, be they who or what they will.

During my Soliloquy the Voices increased, and then by Degrees diminished as usual; but I had scarce got my Gun in my Hand, to pursue my Resolution of shewing myself to those who uttered them, when I felt such a Thump upon the Roof of my Antichamber, as shook the whole Fabrick, and set me all over into a Tremor; I then heard a sort of Shriek, and a Rustle near the Door of my Apartment: all which together seemed very terrible. But I, having before determined to see what, and who it was, resolutely

hitely opened my Door and leaped out. I saw nobody; all was quite silent, and nothing that I could perceive but my own Fears a moving. I went then softly to the Corner of the Building, and there looking down by the Glimmer of my Lamp, which stood in the Window, I saw something in human Shape lying at my Feet. I gave the Word who's there? Still no one answered. My Heart was ready to force a Way through my Side. I was for a while fix'd to the Earth like a Statue. At length, recovering, I stepped in, fetched my Lamp, and returning, saw the very beautiful Face my *Patty* appeared under in my Dream; and not considering that it was only a Dream, I verily thought I had my *Patty* before me, but she seemed to be stone dead. Upon viewing her other Parts, for I had never yet removed my Eyes from her Face, I found she had a sort of brown Chaplet, like Lace, round her Head, under and about which her Hair was tucked up and twined; and she seemed to me to be cloathed in a thin hair-coloured silk Garment; which, upon trying to raise her, I found to be quite warm, and therefore hoped there was Life in the Body it contained. I then took her into my Arms, and treading a Step backwards with her, I put out my Lamp; however, having her in my Arms, I conveyed her through the Door-way in the dark, into my Grotto; here I laid her upon my Bed, and then run out for my Lamp.

This, thinks I, is an amazing Adventure. How could *Patty* come here, and dreſt in Silk and Whalebone too? sure that is not the reigning Fashion in *England* now? But my Dream said she was dead. Why truly, says I, so she seems

seems to be. But be it so, she is warm. Whether this is the Place for Persons to inhabit after Death or not, I can't tell, (for I see there are People here, though I don't know them;) but be it as it will, she feels as Flesh and Blood; and if I can but bring her to stir and act again as my Wife, what matters it to me, what she is! it will be a great Blessing and Comfort to me; for she never would have come to this very Spot, but for my good.

Top-full of these Thoughts, I re-enter my Grotto, shut my Door, and lighted my Lamp; when going to my *Patty*, (as I delighted to fancy her) I thought I saw her Eyes stir a little. I then set the Lamp farther off, for Fear of offending them if she should look up; and warming the last Glass I had reserved of my Madeira, I carried it to her, but she never stirred. I now supposed the Fall had absolutely killed her, and was prodigiously grieved; when laying my Hand on her Breast, I perceived the Fountain of Life had some Motion. This gave me infinite Pleasure; so, not despairing, I dipped my Finger in the Wine, and moistened her Lips with it two or three Times; and I imagined they opened a little. Upon this I bethought me, and taking a Tea-spoon, I gently poured a few Drops of the Wine by that Means into her Mouth. Finding she swallowed it, I poured in another Spoonful, and another, till I brought her to herself, so well as to be able to sit up. All this I did by a glimmering Light, which the Lamp afforded from a distant Part of the Room, where I had placed it, as I have said out of her Sight.

I then spoke to her, and asked divers Questions, as if she had really been *Patty*, and understood me; in return of which, she uttered a Language

I had

I had no Idea of, though in the most musical Tone, and with the sweetest Accent I ever heard, It grieved me I could not understand her. However, thinking she might like to be on her Feet, I went to lift her off the Bed; when she felt to my Touch in the oddest Manner imaginable; for while in one respect it was as though she had been cased up in Whalebone, it was at the same Time as soft and warm, as if she had been naked.

I then took her in my Arms and carried her into my Anti-chamber again; where I would fain have entered into Conversation, but found she and I could make nothing of it together, unless we could understand one another's Speech. It is very strange, my Dream should have prepossessed me so of *Patty*, and of the Alteration of her Countenance, that I could by no Means persuade myself, the Person I had with me was not she; though, upon a deliberate Comparison, *Patty*, as pleasing as she always was to my Taste, would no more come up to this fair Creature, than a coarse Alewife would to *Venus* herself.

You may imagine, we stared heartily at each other, and I doubted not but she wondered as much as I, by what Means we came so near each other. I offered her every Thing in my Grotto, which I thought might please her; some of which she gratefully received, as appeared by her Looks and Behaviour. But she avoided my Lamp, and always placed her Back toward it. I observing that, and ascribing it to her Modesty, in my Company, let her have her Will, and took care to set it in such a Position myself, as seemed agreeable to her, tho' it deprived me of a Prospect I very much admired.

After

After we had sat a good while, now and then, I may say, chattering to one another, she got up, and took a Turn or two about the Room. When I saw her in that Attitude, her Grace and Motion perfectly charmed me, and her Shape was incomparable; but the Strangeness of her Dress put me to my Trumps, to conceive either what it was, or how it was put on.

Well, we supped together, and I set the best of every Thing I had before her, nor could either of us forbear speaking in our own Tongue, tho' we were sensible neither of us understood the other. After Supper I gave her some of my Cordials, for which she shewed great Tokens of Thankfulness, and often, in her way, by Signs and Gestures, which were very far from being insignificant, expressed her Gratitude for my Kindness. When Supper had been some Time over, I shewed her my Bed, and made Signs for her to go to it; but she seemed very shy of that, 'till I shewed her where I meant to lie myself, by pointing to myself, then to that, and again pointing to her and to my Bed. When at length I had made this Matter intelligible to her, she lay down very composedly; and after I had taken Care of my Fire, and set the Things I had been using for Supper in their Places, I laid myself down too: For I could have no suspicious Thoughts, or Fear of Danger, from a Form so excellent.

I treated her for some Time with all the Respect imaginable, and never suffered her to do the least Part of my Work. It was very inconvenient to both of us, only to know each others Meaning by Signs; but I could not be otherwise than pleas'd to see, that she endeavoured all in her Power to learn to talk like me. Indeed I was not behind Hand with her in that Respect,

striving

striving all I could to imitate her. What I all the while wondered at was, she never shewed the least Disquiet at her Confinement: For I kept my Door shut at first, thro' Fear of losing her, thinking she would have taken an Opportunity to run away from me; for little did I then think she could fly.

CHAP. XV.

Wilkin's afraid of losing his new Mistress; they live together all Winter; a Remark on that; they begin to know each others Language; a long Discourse between them at cross purposes; she flies; they engage to be Man and Wife.

AFTER my new Love had been with me a Fortnight, finding my Water run low, I was greatly troubled at the Thought of quitting her any Time, to go for more; and having hinted it to her, with seeming Uneasiness, she could not for a while fathom my Meaning; but when she saw me much confused, she came at length, by the many Signs I made, to imagine it was my Concern for her which made me so; whereupon she expressively enough signified I might be easy, for she did not fear any thing happening to her, in my Absence. On this, as well as I could declare my Meaning, I intreated her not to go away before my Return. As soon as she understood what I signified to her, by Actions, she sat down, with her Arms across, leaning her Head against the Wall, to assure me she would not stir. However, as I had before nailed a Cord to the outside of the Door, I tyed that for Caution's sake, to the Tree, for fear of the

the worst; but I believe she had not the least Design of removing.

I took my Boat, Net, and Water-Cask, as usual; desirous of bringing her home a fresh Fish Dinner; and succeeded so well as to catch enough for several good Meals, and to spare. What remain'd I salted, and found she liked that better than the fresh, after a few Days salting; tho' she did not so well approve of that I had formerly pickled and dryed. As my Salt grew very low, tho' I had been as sparing of it as possible, I now resolved to try making some; and the next Summer I effected it.

Thus we spent the Remainder of the Winter together, 'till the Days began to be light enough for me to walk a broad a little in the middle of them: for I was now under no Apprehensions of her leaving me; as she had before this time had so many Opportunities of doing so, but never once attempted it.

I must here make one Reflection upon our Conduct, which you will almost think incredible, viz. That we two, of different Sexes, not wanting our peculiar Desires, fully inflamed with Love to each other, and no outward Obstacle to prevent our Wishes, should have been together, under the same Roof, alone for five Months, conversing together from Morning to Night, (for by this time she pretty well understood *English*, and I her Language) and yet, I should never have clasped her in my Arms, or have shewn any further amorous Desires to her, than what the Deference I all a long paid her could give her room to surmise. Nay, I can affirm, that I did not even then know, that the Covering she wore, was not the [illegible] of Art, but the Work of Nature; [illegible] for Silk: tho' it must

Tab. I.

The Gluunm Dress

be premised, that I had never seen it by any other Light, than of my Lamp. Indeed the Modesty of her Carriage, and Sweetness of her Behaviour to me, had struck into me such a Dread of offending her, that tho' nothing upon Earth could be more capable of exciting Passion than her Charms, I could have died, rather than have attemped to salute her only, without actual Invitation.

When the Weather cleared up a little, by the lengthening of Day-light, I took Courage one Afternoon to invite her to walk with me to the Lake; but she sweetly excused herself from it, whilst there was such a frightful Glare of Light, as she said; but, looking out at the Door, told me, if I would not go out of the Wood, she would accompany me; So we agreed to take a Turn only there. I first went myself over the Style of the Door, and thinking it rather too high for her, I took her in my Arms and lifted her over. But even when I had her in this Manner, I knew not what to make of her Cloathing, it sat so true and close; but seeing her by a steadier and truer Light in the Grove, tho' a heavy gloomy one, than my Lamp had afforded, I begged she would let me know of what Silk or other Composition her Garment was made. She smil'd, and ask'd me, if mine was not the same under my Jacket? No Lady, says I, I have nothing but my Skin under my Cloaths. Why what do you mean? Replies she, somewhat tartly; but indeed I was afraid something was the Matter, by that nasty Covering you wear, that you might not be seen. Are not you a *Glumm* *? Yes, says I, fair Creature. (Here, tho' you may conceive she spoke part *English*, part her own Tongue, and I the same, as we best understood each

* A Man.

each other, yet I shall give you our Discourse, Word for Word, in plain *English*) Then, says she, I am afraid you must have been a very bad Man, and have been *Grashee* *, which I should be very sorry to hear. I told her I believed we were none of us so good as we might be, but I hoped my Faults had not at most exceeded other Mens; but I had suffered Abundance of Hardships in my time; and that at last Providence having settled me in this Spot, from whence I had no Prospect of ever departing, it was none of the least of it's Mercies, to bring to my Knowledge and Company, the most exquisite Piece of all his Works, in her; which I should acknowledge as long as I lived. She was surpriz'd at this Discourse, and asked me, (if I did not mean to impose upon her, and was indeed an *Ingerashee* † *Glumm*) why I should tell her I had no Prospect of departing from hence? Have not you, says she, the same Prospect, that I or any other Person has of departing? Sir, added she, you don't do well, and really I fear you are slit, or you would not wear this nasty cumbersome Coat, (taking hold of my Jacket Sleeve) if you were not afraid of shewing the Signs of a bad Life upon your natural Cloathing.

I could not for my Heart imagine what Way there was to get out of my Dominions; but certainly, thought I, there must be some or other, or she would not be so peremptory. And as to my Jacket, and shewing myself in my natural Cloathing, I profess she made me blush; and, but for Shame, I would have stripped to my Skin, to have satisfied her. But, Madam, says I, pray, Pardon me, for you are really mistaken;

* Slit. † Unslit.

taken; I have examined every Nook and Corner of this new World, in which we now are, and can find no possible Outlet; nay, even by the same Way I came in, I am sure it is impossible to get out again. Why, says she, what Outlets have you searched for, or what way can you expect out, but the Way you came in? And why is that impossible to return by again? If you are not slit, is not the Air open to you? Will not the Sky admit You to patrole in it, as well as other People? I tell you, Sir, I fear you have been slit for your Crimes; and tho' you have been so good to me, that I can't help loving of you heartily for it; yet, if I thought you had been slit, I would not, nay could not, stay a Moment longer with you; no, tho' it should break my Heart to leave you.

I found myself now in a strange Quandary, longing to know what she meant by being slit; and had a hundred strange Notions in my Head whether I was slit or not; for tho' I knew what the Word naturally signified well enough, yet in what Manner, or by what Figure of Speech, she applied it to me, I had no Idea of. But seeing her look a little angrily upon me, pray, Madam, says I, don't be offended, if I take the Liberty to ask you what you mean by the Word *Crashee**, so often repeated by you; for I am an utter Stranger to what you mean by it. Sir, says she, pray answer me first, how you came here? Madam, replied I, if you will please to take a Walk to the Verge of the Wood, and I will shew you the very Passage. Sir, says she, I perfectly know the Range of the Rocks all round; and by the least Description, without going to see them, can tell from which you descended. In truth, said I,

* Slit.

moſt charming Lady, I deſcended from no Rock at all; nor would I for a thouſand Worlds attempt what could not be accompliſhed but by my Deſtruction. Sir, ſays ſhe, in ſome Anger, it is falſe, and you impoſe upon me. I declare to you, ſays I, Madam, what I tell you is ſtrictly true, I never was near the Summit of any of the ſurrounding Rocks, or any thing like it; but as you are not far from the Verge of the Wood, be ſo good as to ſtep a little further, and I will ſhew you my Entrance in hither. Well, ſays ſhe, now this odious dazzle of Light is leſſened, I don't care if I do go with you.

When we came far enough to ſee the Bridge; there, Madam, ſays I, there is my Entrance, where the Sea pours into this Lake from yonder Cavern. It is not poſſible, ſays ſhe; this is another Untruth; and as I ſee you would deceive me, and are not to be believed, farewel; I muſt be gone. But hold, ſays ſhe, let me aſk you one thing more; that is, by what Means do you come through that Cavern? You could not have uſed to have come over the Rock. Bleſs me, Madam, ſays I, do you think I and my Boat could fly? Come over the Rock, did you ſay? No, Madam, I ſailed from the great Sea, the main Ocean, in my Boat, thro' that Cavern, into this very Lake here. What do you mean by your Boat, ſays ſhe? You ſeem to make two Things of your Boat, you ſay you ſailed with, and yourſelf. I do ſo, replied I, for, Madam, I take myſelf to be good Fleſh and Blood, but my Boat is made of Wood and other Materials. Is it ſo, ſays ſhe, and pray where is this Boat that is made of Wood and other Materials, under your Jacket? Lord! Madam, ſays I, you put me

me in fear, that you was angry; but now I hope you only joke with me; what, put a Boat under my Jacket! No, Madam, my Boat is in the Lake. What! more Untruths, says she. No, Madam, I replied, if you would be satisfied of what I say, every Word of which is as true as that my Boat now is in the Lake, pray walk with me thither, and make your own Eyes Judges, what Sincerity I speak with. To this she agreed, it growing dusky; but assured me, if I did not give her good Satisfaction, I should see her no more.

We arrived at the Lake; and going to my wet Dock, now, Madam, says I, pray, satisfy yourself, whether I speak true or no. She looked at my Boat, but could not yet frame a proper Notion of it. Says I, Madam, in this very Boat, I sailed from the main Ocean, thro' that Cavern, into this Lake; and shall at last, think myself the happiest of all Men if you continue with me, love me and credit me; and I promise you I'll never deceive you, but think my Life happily spent in your Service. I found she was hardly content yet to believe what I told her of my Boat to be true; 'till I stepped into it, and pushing from the Shore, took my Oars in my Hand, and sailed along the Lake by her, as she walked on the Shore. At last, she seemed so well reconciled to me and my Boat, that she desired I would take her in. I immediately did so, and we sailed a good way; and as we return'd to my Dock, I described to her how I procured the Water we drank, and brought it to Shore in that Vessel.

Well, says she, I have sailed, as you call it, many a Mile in my Life-time, but never in such a thing as this. I own it will serve very well, where one has a great many Things to carry

from Place to Place; but, to be labouring thus at an Oar, when one intends Pleasure in sailing, is in my Mind a most ridiculous Piece of Slavery. Why, pray, Madam, how would you have me sail? for, getting into the Boat only, will not carry us this Way or that, without using some Force. But, says she, pray, where did you get this Boat, as you call it? O! Madam, says I, that is too long and fatal a Story to begin upon now; this Boat was made many thousand Miles from hence, among a People coal black, a quite different sort from us; and, when I first had it, I little thought of seeing this Country; but I will make a faithful Relation of all to you, when we come home. Indeed I began to wish heartily we were there, for it grew into the Night; and having strolled so far without my Gun, I was afraid of what I had before seen and heard, and hinted out Return; but I found my Motion was disagreeable to her, and so I dropped it.

I now perceiv'd, and wondered at it, that the later it grew, the more agreeable it seemed to her; and as I had now brought her into a good Humour again, by seeing and sailing in my Boat, I was not willing to prevent its Increase: I told her if she pleas'd we should land, and when I had docked my Boat, I would accompany her where and as long as she liked. As we talked, and walked by the Lake, she made a little Run before me, and sprung into it. Perceiving this, I cried out; whereupon she merrily called on me to follow her. The Light was then so dim, as prevented my having more than a confused Sight of her, when she jumped in; and looking earnestly after her, I could discern nothing more than a small Boat, on the Water, which skimmed along at so great a Rate that I almost lost

Sight

Sight of it presently; but running along the Shore, for fear of losing her, I met her gravely walking to meet me; and then had entirely lost Sight of the Boat upon the Lake. This, says she, accosting me with a Smile, is my Way of Sailing, which, I perceive by the Fright you were in, you are altogether unacquainted with; and as you tell me you came from so many thousand Miles off, it is possible you may be made differently from me; but surely we are the Part of the Creation which has had most Care bestow'd upon it: And I suspect from all your Discourse, to which I have been very attentive, it is possible you may no more be able to fly, than to sail, as I do. No, charming Creature, says I, that I can't, I'll assure you. She then stepping to the Edge of the Lake, for the Advantage of a Descent before her, sprung up into the Air, and away she went, further then my Eyes could follow her.

I was quite astonished. So, says I, then all is over, all a Delusion which I have so long been in, a meer Phantom! better had it been for me never to have seen her, than thus to lose her again! But what could I expect, had she stay'd? for it is plain she is no human Composition. But, says I, she felt like Flesh too, when I lifted her out at the Door.——I had but very little Time for Reflection; for in about ten Minutes after she had left me in this Mixture of Grief and Amazement, she alighted just by me, on her Feet. Her Return, as she plainly saw, filled me with a Transport not to be concealed; and which, as she afterwards told me, was very agreeable to her. Indeed I was some Moments in such an Agitation of Mind, from these unparallelled Incidents, that I was like one Thunder-struck; but

coming presently to myself, and clasping her in my Arms, with as much Love and Passion as I was capable of expressing, and for the first Time with any Desire, are you returned again, kind Angel, said I, to bless a Wretch who can only be happy in adoring you? Can it be, that you who have so many Advantages over me, should quit all the Pleasures that Nature has formed you for, and all your Friends and Relations, to take an Asylum in my Arms? But there make you a Tender of all I am able to bestow, my Love and Constancy.——Come, come, says she, no more Raptures, I find you are a worthier Man than I thought I had Reason to take you for; and I beg your Pardon for my Distrust, whilst I was ignorant of your Imperfections; but now, I verily believe all you have said is true; and I promise you, as you have seemed so much to delight in me, I will never quit you 'till Death, or other as fatal Accident shall part us. But we will now, if you chuse, go home, for I know you have been some Time uneasy in this Gloom, tho' agreeable to me: For, giving my Eyes the Pleasure of looking eagerly on you, it conceals my Blushes from your Sight.

In this Manner, exchanging mutual Endearments, and soft Speeches, Hand in Hand, we arrived at the Grotto; where we that Night consummated our Nuptials, without further Ceremony than mutural solemn Engagements to each other: Which are, in Truth, the Essence of Marriage, and all that was there and then in our Power.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

The Author's Disappointment at first going to Bed with his new Wife; some strange Circumstances relating thereto; she resolves several Questions he asks her, and clears up his Fears as to the Voices; A Description of Swangeans.

EVERY Calm is succeeded by a Storm, as is every Storm by its Calm; for, after Supper, in order to give my Bride the Opportunity of undressing alone, which I thought might be most agreeable the first Night, I withdrew into the Anti-chamber, 'till I thought she was laid; and then, having first disposed of my Lamp, I moved softly towards her, and stepped into Bed too; when, on my nearer Approach to her, I imagined she had her Cloaths on. This struck a thorough Damp over me; and asking her the Reason of it, not being able to touch the least Bit of her Flesh, but her Face and Hands, she burst out a laughing; and running her Hand along my naked Side, soon perceived the Difference, she before had made such doubt of, between herself and me. Upon which she fairly told me, that neither she, nor any Person she had ever seen before, had any other Covering than what they were born with, and which they would not willingly part with but with their Lives. This shocked me terribly; not from the Horror of the Thing itself, or any Distaste I had to this Covering, for it was quite smooth, warm, and softer than Velvet, or the finest Skin imaginable; but from an Apprehension of her being so wholly incased in it, that tho' I had so fine a Companion, and now a Wife, yet, I should have no

conjugal Benefit from her, either to my own Gratification, or the Increase of our Species.

In the Height of my Impatience, I made divers Essays for unfolding this Covering, but unsuccessfully. Surely, says I, there must be some Way of coming at my Wishes; or why should she seem so shy of me at first, and now we are under Engagements to each other, meet me half Way with such a yielding Compliance? I could, if I had had Time to spare, have gone on, starting Objections and answering them, in my own Breast, a great while longer, (for I now knew not what to make of it;) but being prompted to act as well as think, and feeling, as tenderly as possible, upon her Bosom, for the Folds or Plaits of her Garment, she lying perfectly still, and perceiving divers flat broad Ledges like Whalebone, seemingly under her Covering, which closely infolded her Body, I thought, it might be all laced on together, somewhat like Stays, and felt behind for the Lacing. At length, perceiving me so puzzled, and beyond Conception vexed at my Disappointment; of a sudden, lest I should grow outrageous, which I was almost come to, she threw down all those seeming Ribs, flat to her Side, so imperceptibly to me, that I knew nothing of the Matter, though I lay close to her; 'till putting forth my Hand again to her Bosom, the softest Skin and most delightful Body, free from all Impediment, presented itself to my Wishes, and gave up itself to my Embraces.

I slept very soundly 'till Morning, and so did she; but at waking I was very solicitous to find out what sort of Being I had had in my Arms, and with what Qualities her Garment was endued, or how contrived, that notwithstanding all my fruitless Attempts to uncover her, she herself could

so

so instantaneously dispose of it, undiscerned by me: Well, thought I, she is my Wife, I will be satisfied in every Thing, for surely she will not now refuse to gratify my Curiosity.

We rose with the Light; but surely no two were ever more amorous, or more delighted with each other. I being up first, lighted the Fire, and prepared Breakfast of some Fish Soup, thickened with my Cream-Cheese; and then calling her, I kept my Eye towards the Bed to see how she dress'd herself; but throwing aside the Cloaths, she stepped out ready dressed, and came to me. When I had kissed her, and wished her a good Day, we sat down to Breakfast; which being soon over, I told her, I hoped every Minute of our Lives would prove as happy as those we so lately passed together; which she seemed to wish with equal Ardour. I then told her, now she was my Wife, I thought proper to know her Name, which I had never before asked, for fear of giving Uneasiness; for, as I added, I did not doubt, she had observed in my Behaviour, ever since I first saw her, a peculiar Tenderness for her, and a sedulous Concern not to offend; which had obliged me, hitherto, to stifle several Questions I had to ask her, whenever they would be agreeable to her. She then bid me begin, for as she was now my Wife, whilst I was speaking, it became her to be all Attention, and to give me the utmost Satisfaction she could in all I should require, as she herself should have so great an Interest in every Thing for the Future which would oblige me.

Compliments (if in Compliance with old Custom I may call 'em so, for they were by us delivered from the Heart) being a little over on both Sides, I first desired to know what Name she

went

went by, before I found her: For, says I, having only hitherto called you, Madam, and my Lady; besides the future Expression of my Love to you in the Word *Dear*, I would know your original Name, that so I might join it with that tender Epithet. That you shall, says she, and also my Family at another Opportunity; but as my Name will not take up long Time to repeat at present, it is YOUWARKEE. And pray, says she, now gratify me with the Knowledge of yours. My dear *Youwarkee*, says I, my Name was PETER WILKINS when I heard it last; but that is so long ago, I had almost forgot it. And now says I, there is another Thing you can give me a Pleasure in. You need then only mention it, my dear *Peter*, says she. That is, says I, only to tell me, if you did not, by some Accident, fall from the Top of the Rock over my Habitation, upon the Roof of it, when I first took you in here; and whether you are of the Country upon the Rocks? She, softly smiling, answered, my dear *Peter* you run your Questions too thick; as to my Country, which is not on the Rocks, as you suppose, but at a vast Distance from hence, I shall leave that, 'till I may hereafter, at more Leisure, speak of my Family, as I promised you before; but as to how I came into this Grotto, I knew not at first, but soon perceived your Humanity had brought me in, to take care of me, after a terrible Fall I had: Not from the Rock, as you suppose; for then I must not now have been living to enjoy you; but from a far less considerable Height in the Air. I'll tell you how it happened. A Parcel of us young People were upon a merry *Swangean*, * round this *Arkoe*, † which

* Flight.

† Water surrounded with a Wood.

which we usually divert ourselves with at set Times of the Year, chasing and pursuing one another, sometimes soaring to an extravagant Height, and then shooting down again with surprizing Precipitancy, 'till we even touch the Trees; when, of a sudden, we mount again and away. I say, being of this Party, and pursued by one of my Comrades, I descended down to the very Trees, and she after me; but, as I mounted, she over-shooting me, brushed so stiffly against the upper Part of my *Graundee*, * that I lost my bearing; and being so near the Branches, before I could recover it again, I sunk into the Tree, and rendered my *Graundee* useless to me, so that down I came, and that with so much Force, that I but just felt my Fall, and lost my Senses. Whether I cried out or no upon my coming to the Ground I cannot say; but if I did, my Companion was too far gone by that Time to hear or take notice of me; as she probably, in so swift a Flight, saw not my Fall. As to the Condition I was in, or what happened immediately afterwards, I must be obliged to you for a Relation of that: But one Thing I was quickly sensible of, and never can forget, *viz.* that I owe my Life to your Care, and Kindness to me.

I told her she should have that Part of her Story from me another Time; but, says I, there is something so amazing in these Flights, or *Swangeans*, as you call them, that I must, as the Questions for this Day, beg you would let me know, what is the Method of 'em? what's the Nature of your Covering? (which was at first such an Obstacle to my Wishes) how you put it on? and how you use it in your *Swangean*?

Surely,

* The Covering and Wings of Skin they flew with.

Surely, my dearest *Peter*, says she, but that I can deny you nothing, since you are my *Barkatt*, * which you seem so passionately to desire, the latter of your Questions would not be answered, for it must put me to the Blush. As to our Method of Flight, you saw somewhat of that, last Night; tho' in a Light hardly sufficient for you; and, for the Nature of my Covering, you perceive that now: But to shew you how it is put on, as you call it, I am afraid it will be necessary, as far as I can, to put it off, before I can make you comprehend that; which having done, the whole will be no further a Mystery. But, not to be tedious, is it your Command that I uncover? Lay that upon me, it shall be done. Here I was at a Plunge, whether to proceed, or drop the Question. Thinks I, if my Curiosity should be fatal to me, as I may see something I can never bear hereafter, I am undone. She waits the Command! why so? I know not the Consequence. What shall I do? At last, somewhat resolutely, I asked her, Whether her Answer, either Way, to my Command, would cause her to leave me, or me to love her less? She seeing my Hesitation, and perceiving the Cause, was so pleased, that she cried out, No, my dear *Peter*, nor that, nor all the Force on Earth, shall ever part me from you. But I conceive you are afraid, you shall discover something in me, you may not like; I fear not that; but an immodest Appearance before you, I can't suffer myself to be guilty of, but under your own Command.

My lovely *Youwarkee*, says I, delay then my Desires no longer; and since you require a Warrant from me, I do command you to do it. Immediately her *Graundee* flew open, (discovering her

* Husband.

her naked Body, juſt to the Hip, and round the Rim of her Belly,) and expanding itſelf, was near ſix Feet wide. Here my Love and Curioſity had a hard Conflict; the one to gain my Attention to the *Graundee*, and the other to retain my Eyes and Thoughts on her lovely Body, which I had never beheld ſo much of before. Tho' I was very unwilling to keep her uncovered too long, I could not eaſily diſmiſs ſo charming a Sight. I attentively view'd her lovely Fleſh, and examined the Caſe that enſhrined it: But as I ſhall give you a full Deſcription of this *Graundee* hereafter, in a more proper Place, I will mention it no further here, than to tell you, that when I had narrowly ſurveyed the upper Part of it, ſhe in a Moment contracted it round her ſo cloſe, that the niceſt Eye could not perceive the joining of the Parts.

Indeed my dear *Youwarkee*, ſays I, you had the beſt of Reaſons for ſaying you was not fearful I ſhould diſcover any Thing in you diſpleaſing; for, if my Boſom glow'd with Love before, you have now therein raiſed an ardent Flame, which neither Time nor ought elſe will ever be able to extinguiſh. I now almoſt conceive how you fly: Tho' yet I am at a Loſs to know, how you extend and make uſe of the lower Part of your *Graundee*, which riſes up and meets the upper; but I will rather gueſs at that, by what I have ſeen, than raiſe the Colour higher in thoſe fair Cheeks, which are however adorn'd with Bluſhes. Then running to her, and taking her in my Arms, I called her the Gift of Heaven; and left off further Interrogatories 'till another Opportunity.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

Youwarkee cannot bear a strong Light; Wilkins makes her Spectacles which help her; a Description of them.

YOUWARKEE and I having no other Company than one another's, we talked together almost from Morning to Night, in order to learn each others Dialect. But how compliable soever she was in all other Respects, I could not perswade her to go out with me to fetch Water, or to the Lake, in the Day-time. It being now the light Season, I wanted her to be more abroad; but she excused herself, telling me her People never came into those luminous Parts of the Country, during the false Glare, as they called it, but kept altogether at home, where their Light was more moderate and steddier; and that the Place where I resided, was not frequented by them for half the Year; and at other Times only upon Parties of Pleasure; it not being worth while to settle Habitations, where they could not abide always. She said *Normbdsgrsutt*, was the finest Region in the World, where her King's Court was, and a vast Kingdom. I asked her twice or thrice more to name the Country to me; but not all the Art we could use, her's in dictating, and mine in endeavouring to pronounce it, would render me Conqueror of that poor Monosyllable, (for as such it sounded from her sweet Lips:) So I relinquished the Name to her; telling her, whenever she had any more Occasion to mention the Place, I desired it might be under the Stile of

Doorpt

Doorpt Swangeanti; * which she promised; but wondered, as she could speak the other so glibly, as she called it, I could not do so too.

I told her, that the Light of my Native Country was far stronger than any I had seen since my Arrival at *Graundevolet*, (for that, I found by her, was the Name my Dominions went by;) and that we had a Sun, or Ball of Fire, which roll'd over our Heads every Day, with such a Light and such a Heat, that it would sometimes almost scorch one, it was so hot; and was of such Brightness, that the Eye could not look at it without Danger of Blindness. She was heartily glad, she said, she was not born in so wretched a Land; and she did not believe there was any other so good as her own. I thought no Benefit could arise from my Combating these innocent Prejudices, so I let 'em alone.

She had often lamented to me, the Difference of our Eye-Sight, and the Trouble it was to her, that she could not at all Times go about with me; 'till it gave me a good deal of Uneasiness to see her Concern. At last I told her, that tho' I believed it would be impossible to reduce my Sight to the Standard of her's, yet I was perswaded, I could bring her's to bear the strongest Light I had ever seen in this Country. She was mightly pleased with the Thought of that, and said she wished I might; for she was sensible of no Grief, like being obliged to stay at home, when I went abroad on my Business; and was resolved to try my Experiment, if I pleased; and in the mean Time should heartily pray for the Success.—I light on the following Invention.

I rumaged

* The Land of Flight.

I rumaged over all my old Things, and by good Luck found an old crape Hatband. This I tried myself, single, before my own Eyes, in the strongest Light we had; but, believing I had not yet obscured it enough, I doubled it, and then thought it might do; but for fear it should not, I trebled it; and then it seemed too dark for Eyes like mine to discover Objects thro' it, and so I judged it would suit her's: For I was determined to produce something, if possible, that would do, at first, without Repetition of Trial; which I thought would only deject her more, by making her look on the Matter as impracticable. I now only wanted a proper Method for fixing it on her; and this I thought would be easily effected; but had much more Difficulty in it than I imagined. At first I purposed to tye the Crape over her Eyes; but trying it myself, I found it very rough and fretting. I then designed fixing it to an old Crown of a Hat, that held my Fish Hooks and Lines, and so let it hang down before her Face: but that also had its Inconveniences, as it would flap her Eyes in windy Weather, and would be not only useless but very troublesome in Flight; so that I was scarce ever more puzzled before. At last I thought of a Method that answered exceedingly well; the Hint of which I took from somewhat I had seen with my Master, when I was at School, which he called Goggles, and which he used to tie round his Head, to skreen his Eyes in riding. The thing I made upon that Plan was compos'd of old Hat, Pieces of Ram's-Horn, and the above mentioned Crape.

When I had finished the whole Apparatus, I tried it first upon myself, and finding great Reason to believe it wou'd perfectly answer the Intention.

I ran

I ran directly to *Youwarkee*. Come, ſays I, my Dear, will you go with me to the Water Rill? for I muſt fetch ſome this Morning. She ſhook her Head, and with Tears in her Eyes wiſhed ſhe could; but, ſays ſhe, let me ſee how light it is abroad? No, ſays I, my Love, you muſt not look out till you go. Indeed, ſays ſhe, if it did not affect my Eyes and Head, you ſhould not aſk me twice. Well, ſays I, my *Youwarkee*, I am now come to take you with me; and that you may not ſuffer by it, turn about, and let me apply the Remedy I told you of for your Sight. She wanted much to ſee firſt what it was; but I begged her to forbear, till ſhe tried whether it would be uſeful or not. She told me, She would abſolutely ſubmit to my Direction; ſo I adjuſted the Thing to her Head. Now, ſays I, you have it on, let us go out and try it; and let me know the Moment you find the Light offenſive, and take particular Notice how you are affected. Hereupon away we marched, and I heard no Complaint in all our Walk to the Lake.

Now my dear *Youwarkee*, ſays I, when we got there, what do you think of my Contrivance, can you ſee at all? Yes, very well, ſays ſhe. But, my dear *Peter*, you have taken the Advantage of the Twilight, I know, to deceive me; and I had rather have ſtay'd at home, than have ſubjected you to return in the Night, for the Sake of my Company. I then aſſured her it was Mid-Day, and no later, which pleaſed her mightily; and to ſatisfy her, I untied the String behind and juſt let her be convinced it was ſo. When I had fixed the Shade on her Head again, ſhe put up her Hands, and felt the ſeveral Materials of which it conſiſted; and after expreſſing her Admiration of it, ſo my

my dear *Peter*, says she, you have now encumbered yourself with a Wife indeed, for since I can come abroad in a glaring Light, with so much Ease, you will never henceforward be without my Company.

Youwarkee being thus in Spirits, we launched the Boat, watered, took a Draft of Fish, and return'd; passing the Night at home, in talking of the Spectacles, (for that was the Name I told her they must go by) and of the Fishing: for that Exercise delighted her to a great Degree. But, above all, the Spectacles were her chief Theme; she handled 'em and look'd at 'em again and again, and asked several rational Questions about them; as how they could have that Effect on her Eyes, enabling her to see, and the like. She ventured out, with them on, next Day by herself; and as she threatned, she was as good as her Word, for she scarcely afterwards let me go abroad by myself, but accompanied me every where freely, and with Delight.

CHAP. XVIII.

Youwarkee *with Child*; Wilkin's *Stock of Provisions*; *no Beast or Fish in* Youwarkee's *Country*; *the Voices again*; *her Reason for not seeing those who uttered 'em*; *she bears a Son*; *a hard Speech in her lying in*; *divers Birds appear*; *their Eggs gathered*; *how* Wilkin's *kept Account of Time.*

About three Months after we were married, as we called it, *Youwarkee* told me she believed she was Breeding; and I was mightily pleased with it: for tho' I had had two Children before, by *Patty*, yet I never had seen either of them; so that I longed to be a Father. I sometimes

ſometimes amuſed myſelf with whimſical Conjectures, as whether the Child would have a *Graundee*, or not; which of us it would be moſt like; how we ſhould do without a Midwife; and what muſt become of the Infant, as we had no Milk, in Caſe *Youwarkee* could not ſuckle it. Indeed I had Leiſure enough for indulging ſuch Reveries; for having laid in our Winter Stores, my Wife and I had nothing to do but enjoy our ſelves over a good Fire, pratling and toying together, making as good Cheer as we could: And truly that was none of the worſt; for we had as fine Bread as need to be eaten; we had Pears preſerved; all Sorts of dry'd Fiſh; and once a Fortnight, for two or three Days together, had freſh Fiſh; we had Vinegar; and a biting Herb, I had found, for Pepper; and ſeveral Sorts of Nuts; ſo there was no Want.

It was at this Time, after my Return from watering one Day, where *Youwarkee* had been with me; that, having taken ſeveral Fiſh, and amongſt them ſome I had not before ſeen, I aſked her, as we were preparing and ſalting ſome of them, how they managed Fiſh in her Country, and what Variety they had of them there? She told me, ſhe neither ever ſaw, nor heard of a Fiſh in her Life, 'till ſhe came to me. How! ſays I, no Fiſh amongſt you? why you want one of the greateſt Dainties that can be ſet upon a Table. Do you wholly eat Fleſh, ſay I, at *Doorpt Swangeanti*? Fleſh ſays ſhe, laughtingly, of what? Nay, ſays I, you know beſt what the Beaſts of your own Country are; we have in *England*, where I was born and bred, Oxen, very large Hogs, Sheep, Lambs, and Calves; theſe make our ordinary Diſhes; then, we have Deer, Hares, Rabbits, and theſe are reckoned Dainties; beſides numberleſs Kinds of

Poultry,

Poultry, and Fish without stint. I never heard of any of these Things in my Life, says *Youwarkee*; nor did I ever eat any Thing but Fruits, and Herbs, and what is made from them at *Normbdsgrsutt*. You will speak that crabbed Word, says I, again. I beg your Pardon, my Dear, says she: at *Doorpt Swangeanti* I say, nor I, nor any one else, to my Knowledge, ever eat any such Thing. But seeing you eat Fish, as you call them, I made no Scruple of doing so too; and like them very well, especially the salted ones: for I never tasted what you call Salt, neither, 'till I came here. I can't think, says I, what Sort of a Country yours is, or how you all live there. O says she, there's no Want; I wish you and I were there.——I was afraid I had talked too much of her Country already, so we called a new Cause.

Soon after Winter had set in, as we were in Bed one Night, I heard the Voices again. And tho' my Wife had told me of her Country Folks, *Swangeans*, in that Place, I being frighted a little, waked her; and she hearing them too, cry'd out, there they are, it is ten to one but my Sister or some of our Family are there; hark! I believe I hear her Voice. I myself hearkned very attentively; and by this Time understanding a great deal of their Language, I not only could distinguish different Speakers, but knew the Meaning of several of the Words they pronounced.

I would have had *Youwarkee* have gotten up, and called to them. Not for the World, says she, have you a Mind to part with me? Tho' I have no Intent to leave you, as I am with Child, if they should try to force me away, without my Consent, I may receive some Injury, to the Danger of my own Life, or at least of the Child's.

This

This Reason perfectly satisfying me, endeared the loving Creature to me ten Times more, if possible, than ever.

The next Summer brought me a *Yawm*, * as fair as Alabaster. My Wife was delivered without the usual Assistance, and had as favourable a Labour as could be. The first Thing I did, after giving her some Fish Soup, made as skilfully as I was able, and a little Cordial, was, to see if my Yawn had the *Graundee*, or not. Finding it had, so, says I, to *Youwarkee*, you have brought me a legitimate Heir to my Dominions, whose Title sure can't be disputed, being one of you. Tho' I spoke this, with as much Pleasure, and in as endearing a Way, as ever I spoke in my Life, and quite innocently; the poor *Youwarkee* burst into Tears, to such Excess, there was no pacifying her. I asked her the Reason of her Grief, begged and intreated her to let me know what disturbed her; but all in vain; 'till seeing me in a violent Passion, such as I had never before appeared to be in, she told me, she was very sorry I should question her Fidelity to me. She surprized me in saying this, as I never had any such Apprehension. No, my dearest Wife, says I, I never had any such Suspicion as you charge me with, I can safely affirm; nor can I comprehend your Meaning by imputing such a Thing to me. Oh! says she, I am sure you have no Cause for it, but, you said *the poor Child was one of us*, as much as to intimate, that had it been your own, it would have been born as you were, without the *Graundee*: Which Thought I can't bear; and if you continue to think so, it must end me; therefore take away my Life now, rather than let me live to see my further Misery.

I was

* Man Child.

I was heartily sorry for what I had said, when I saw the Effects of it, tho' I did not imagine it could have been perverted to such a contrary Meaning. But considering her to be the faithfullest and most loving Creature upon Earth, and that true Love can't bear any Thing that touches upon, or can be applied (though with ever so forced a Construction) to an opprobrious or contemptuous Meaning, I attributed her groundless Resentment, to her Excess of Fondness only for me; and falling upon the Bed by her, and bathing her Face in my Tears, I assured her the Interpretation she had put on my Words, was altogether foreign from the View they were spoken with; professing to her, that I never had, nor ever could have, the least Cause of Jealousy. On my confirming this absolute Confidence in her Virtue, by the strongest Asseverations, she grew fully convinced of her Error, and acknowledged she had been too rash in censuring me: and growing pleased at my fresh Professions of Love to her, we presently were reconciled, and became again very good Friends.

When *Youwarkee* had gathered Strength again, she prov'd an excellent Nurse to my *Pedro*, for that was the Name I gave him, so that he soon grew a charming Child, able to go in his twelfth Month, and spoke in his twentieth. This and two other lovely Boys I had by her within three Years; every one of which she brought up with the Breast, and they thriv'd delicately.

I don't mention the little intervening Occurrences which happened during this Period; they consisting chiefly of the old Rota, of fishing, watering, providing in the Summer for the Winter, and in managing my Saltwork: which, altogether,

together, kept me at full [illegible]oyment, comfortably to maintain an encrea[illegible] Family.

In this time, I had found [illegible]t several new Sorts of Eatables. I had observed, as I said before, Abundance of Birds about the Wood and Lake, in the Summer Months. These, by firing at 'em two or three times, on my first coming, I had almost caused to desert my Dominions. But, as I had, for the last two or three Years, given no Disturbance at all to them, they were now in as great Plenty as ever: And I made great Profit of them, by the Peace they enjoy'd; and yet my Table never wanted a Supply, fresh in the Summer, or salted and pickled in Winter.

I took Notice, it was about *October* these Birds used to come; and most of the Month of *November* they were busy in laying their Eggs, which I used at that time to find in great Plenty, along the Banks of the Lake, in the Reeds, and made great Collections of them; I used also to find a great many in the Woods, amongst the Shrubs and Underwood. These furnished our Table various Ways; for, with my CreamCheese, Flower, and a little Mixture of Ramshorn Juice, I had taught my Wife to make excellent Puddings of 'em; Abundance of them also we eat boiled or fryed, alone, and often as Sauce to our Fish. As for the Birds themselves, having long omitted to fire at them, I had an effectual Means of taking them otherwise, by Nets, which I set between the Trees, and also very large pitfal Nets, with which I used to catch all Sorts, even from the size of a Trush to that of a Turkey. But as I shall say more of these when I come to speak of my Ward, by and by, and of my Poultry, I shall omit any further mention of 'em here.

You may perhaps wonder how I could keep an Account of my Time ſo preciſely, as to talk of the particular Months. I will tell you. At my coming from *America*, I was then exact; for we ſet ſail the fourteenth of *November*, and ſtruck the firſt or ſecond Day of *February*. So far I kept perfect Reckoning. But, after that, I was not ſo exact: Tho' I kept it as well as my Perplexity would admit even then, 'till the Days ſhortning upon me, prevented it.

Hereupon I ſet about making a Year for myſelf. I found the Duration of the comparative Darkneſs, or, what might with me be termed Night, in the Courſe of the twenty four Hours or Day, gradually encreaſed for ſix Months; after which it decreaſed reciprocally, for an equal Time, and the lighter part of the Day took its turn, as in our Parts of the World, only inverſely: ſo that, as the Light's Decreaſe became ſenſible about the middle of *March*, it was at the greateſt Pitch the latter End of *Auguſt*, or Beginning of *September*; and from thence, on the contrary, went on decreaſing to the Cloſe of *February*, when I had the longeſt Portion of Light. Hereupon, dividing my Year, into two Seaſons only, I began the Winter half in *March*, and the Summer half in *September*. Thus my Winter was the Spring and Summer Quarters of us in *Europe*, and my Summer thoſe of our Autumn and Winter.

From my ſettling this Matter, I kept little Account of Days or Weeks, but only reckoned my Time by Summer and Winter: ſo that I am pretty right as to the Revolutions of theſe; tho' the Years, as to their Notation, I kept no Account of, nor do I know what Year of the Lord it now is.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

Wilkin's *Concern about Cloathing for* Pedro, *his eldest Son; his Discourse with his Wife about the Ship; her Flight to it; his melancholy Reflections 'till her Return; an Account of what she had done, and of what she brought; she cloaths her Children, and takes a second Flight.*

AS my Boy *Pedro* grew up, tho', as I said before, he had the *Graundee*, yet it was of less Dimensions than it ought to have been, to be useful to him; so that it was visible, he could never fly; for it would scarce meet before, whereas it ought to have reached from Side to Side both ways. This pleased my Wife to the Heart; for now she was sure, whatever I had done before, I could not suspect her. Be that as it will, the Boy's *Graundee* not being a sufficient Vestment for him, it became necessary he should be cloathed.

I turned over my Hoard, but could find nothing that would do; or, at least, that we knew how to fit him with. I had described my own Country Vest for Lads to *Youwarkee*, and she form'd a tolerable Idea of it, but we had no Tackle to alter any thing with. O my Dear, says I, had I but been born with the *Graundee*, I need not be now racking my Brains to get my Child Cloaths. What do you mean by that, says she? Why, says I, I would have flown to my Ship, (for I had long before related to her all my Sea Adventures, 'till the Vessel's coming to the magnetical Rock) and have brought some such Things from thence, as you, not wanting them in this Country, can have no Notion of. She seemed mighty inquisitive, to understand how a Ship was made, what it was

moſt like to, how a Perſon who never ſaw one might know it only by the Deſcription, and how one might get into it; with Abundance of the like Queſtions. She then inquired, what ſort of things thoſe Needles and ſeveral other Utenſils were, which I had at times been ſpeaking of; and in what part of a Ship they uſually kept ſuch Articles. And I, to gratify her Curioſity, as I perceived ſhe took a Pleaſure in hearing me, anſwered all her Queſtions to a Scruple: not then conceiving the ſecret Purpoſe of all this Inquiſitiveneſs.

About two Days after this, having been out two or three Hours in the Morning, to cut Wood; at coming home I found *Pedro* crying, ready to break his Heart, and his little Brother Tommy, hanging to him, and crawling about the Floor after him: the youngeſt (pretty Baby) was faſt aſleep upon one of the Beaſt-Fiſh Skins, in a Corner of the Room. I aſked *Pedro* for his Mother, but the poor Infant had nothing further to ſay to the Matter, than Mammy run away, I cry, Mammy run away, I cry. I admired where ſhe was gone, never before miſſing her from our Habitation. However, I waited patiently 'till Bed-time, but no Wife. I grew very uneaſy then. Yet, as my Children were tired and ſleepy, I thought I had beſt go to Bed with them, and make quiet. So, giving all three their Suppers, we lay down together. They ſlept; but my Mind was too full to permit the Cloſure of my Eyes. A thouſand different Chimeras ſwam in my Imagination relating to my Wife. One while I fancied her carried away by her Kinsfolks; then, that ſhe was gone of her own accord to make Peace with her Father. But that thought would not fix, being put aſide by her conſtant

Tenderneſs

Tenderneſs to her Children, and Regard to me; whom I was ſure ſhe would not have left without Notice. But alaſs! ſays I, ſhe may even now be near me, but taken ſo ill ſhe can't get home; or, ſhe may have died ſuddenly, in the Wood. I lay tumbling and toſſing in great Anxiety, not able to find out any excuſable Occaſion ſhe could have, of ſo long Abſence. And then, thinks I, if ſhe ſhould either be dead, or have quite left me, which will be of equally bad Conſequence to me, what can I do with three poor helpleſs Infants? If they were a little more grown up, they might be helpful to me, and to each other; but at their Age, how ſhall I ever rear them, without the Tenderneſs of a Mother? And to ſee them pine away before my Face, and not know how to help them, will diſtract me.

Finding I could neither ſleep, nor lie ſtill, I roſe, intending to ſearch all the Woods about, and call to her, that if any Accident had prevented Sight of her, ſhe might at leaſt hear me. But upon opening the Door, and juſt ſtepping out, how agreeably was I ſurprized, to meet her coming in, with ſomething on her Arm. My dear *Youwarkee*, ſays I, where have you been? What has befallen you to keep you out ſo long? The poor Children have been at their Wit's end to find you; and I, my Dear, have been unconſolable; and was now, almoſt diſtracted, coming in ſearch of you.

Youwarkee looked very blank, to think what Concern ſhe had given me and the Children. My deareſt *Peter*, ſays ſhe, (kiſſing me) pray forgive me the only thing I have ever done to offend you, and the laſt Cauſe you ſhall ever have, by my good Will, to complain of me; but walk within Doors, and I will give you a farther Account of

my Absence. Don't you remember what Delight I took the other Day to hear you talk of your Ship? Yes, says I, you did so, but what of that? Nay, pray, says she, forgive me for I have been to see it. That's impossible, says I: And truly this was the first time I ever thought she went about to deceive me. I do assure you, says she, I have; and a wonderful Thing it is; but if you distrust me, and what I say, I have brought Proof of it; step out with me to the Verge of the Wood, and satisfy yourself. But pray, says I, who presented you with this upon your Arm? I vow, says she, I had forgot this; yes, this will, I believe, confirm to you what I have said. I turn'd it over and over; and looking wishfully upon her, says I, this Waistcoat, indeed, is the very fellow to one that lay in the Captain's Locker, in the Cabbin. Say not the very fellow, says she, but rather say the very same; for I'll assure you it is so; and had you been with me, we might have got so many things for ourselves and the Children, we should never have wanted more, tho' we lived these hundred Years; but as it is, I have left something without the Wood, for you to bring up. When we had had our Talk out, she hearing the Children stir, took them up, and was going, as she always did, to get their Breakfasts. Hold, says I, this Journey must have fatigued you too much already, lay yourself to Rest, and leave every thing else to me. My Dear, says she, you seem to think this Flight tiresome, but you are mistaken; I am more weary with walking to the Lake and back again, than with all the Rest. Oh, says she, if you had but the *Graundee*, flying would rest you, after the greatest Labour; for the Parts which are moved with Exercise on the Earth, are all at Rest in Flight;

as,

as, on the contrary, the Parts used in Flight are, when on earthly Travel. The whole Trouble of Flight is, in mounting from the plain Ground; but when once you are upon the *Graundee*, at a proper Height, all the rest is Play, a meer Trifle; you need only think of your Way, and incline to it, your *Graundee* directs you as readily as your Feet obey you on the Ground, without thinking of every Step you take: it does not require Labour, as your Boat does, to keep you a going.

After we had composed ourselves, we walked to the Verge of the Wood, to see what Cargo my Wife had brought from the Ship. I was astonished at the Bulk of it; and seeing, by the outside, it consisted of Cloaths, I took it, with much ado, upon my Shoulders, and carried it Home. But upon opening it, I found far more Treasure than I could have imagined: for there was a Hammer, a great many Spikes and Nails, three Spoons, about five Plates of Pewter, four Knives and a Fork, a small China Punch Bowl, two Chocolate Cups, a Paper of Needles, and several of Pins, a Parcel of coarse Thread, a pair of Shoes, and Abundance of such other things as she had heard me wish for and describe; besides as much Linen and Woollen, of one Sort or another, as made a good Package for all the other things; with a great Tin Porridge Pot, of about two Gallons, tyed to the outside: and all these as nicely stowed, as if she had been bred a Packer.

When I had viewed the Bundle, and poised the Weight; how was it possible, my dear *Youwarkee*, said I, for you to bring all this? You could never carry them in your Hands. No, no, replied she, I carried them on my Back. Is it possible says I, for your *Graundee* to bear yourself and all this Weight too, in the Air, and to

ſuch an Height as the Top of theſe Rocks? You will always, replies ſhe, make the Height a part of your Difficulty in flying; but you are deceived; for as the firſt Stroke, (I have heard you ſay often) in Fighting, is half the Battle, ſo it is in Flying; get but once fairly on the Wind, nothing can hurt you afterwards. My Method, let me tell you, was this: I climb'd to the higheſt part of the Ship, where I could ſtand clear, having firſt put up my Burthen, which you have there; and then, getting that on my Back, near my Shoulders, I took the two Cords you ſee hang looſe to it, in my two Hands, and extending my *Graundee*, leaped off, flatwiſe, with my Face towards the Water; when, inſtantly, playing two or three good Strokes with my *Graundee*, I was out of Danger: Now, if I had found the Bundle too heavy to make my firſt Strokes with, I ſhould directly have turned on my Back, dropped my Bundle, and floated in my *Graundee* to the Ship again, as you once ſaw me float on the Lake. Says I, you muſt have flown a prodigious Diſtance to the Ship, for I was ſeveral Days ſailing, I believe three Weeks, from my Ship, before I reached the Gulph; and after that, could be little leſs than five Weeks, (as I accounted for it) and at a great Rate of Sailing too, under the Rock, before I reached the Lake; ſo that the Ship muſt be a monſtrous Way off. No, no, ſays ſhe, your Ship lies but over yon Cliff, that riſes as it were with two Points; and as to the Rock it ſelf, it is not broader than our Lake is long: But what made you ſo tedious in your Paſſage was, many of the windings and turnings in the Cavern returning into themſelves again; ſo that you might have gone round and round 'till this time, if the Tide had

not

not luckily ſtruck you into the direct Paſſage: This, ſays ſhe, I have heard from ſome of my Countrymen, who have flown up it, but could never get quite thro'.

I wiſh with all my Heart, ſays I, Fortune had brought me firſt to Light in this Country; or (but for your Sake I could almoſt ſay) had never brought me into it at all: For, to be a Creature of the leaſt Significancy of the whole Race about one, is a melancholy Circumſtance. Fear not, ſays ſhe, my Love, for you have a Wife will hazard all for you, tho' you are reſtrained: And as my Inclinations and Affections are ſo much yours, that I need but know your Deſires, to execute them, as far as my Power extends; ſurely you, who can act by another, may be content to forego the Trouble of your own Performance. I perceive, indeed, continued ſhe, you want mightily to go to your Ship, and are more uneaſy, now you know it is ſafe, than you was before; but that being paſt my Skill to aſſiſt you in, if you will command your Deputy, to go backwards and forwards in your ſtead, I am ready to obey you.

Thus ended our Converſation about the Ship for that time. But it left not my Mind ſo ſoon; for a ſtronger Hankering after it purſued me now than ever, ſince my Wife's Flight; but to no purpoſe.

We ſat us down, and ſorted out our Cargo, Piece by Piece; and having found ſeveral things proper for the Children, my Wife longed to enter upon ſome Piece of Work towards Cloathing *Pedro*, in the Manner ſhe had heard me talk of; and laid hard at me, to ſhew her the Uſe of the Needles, Thread, and other things ſhe had brought. Indeed, I muſt ſay, ſhe proved very tractable; and from the little Inſtruction I was able to give her, ſoon outwrought my Know-

ledge: For I could only ſhew her that the Thread went thro' the Needle, and both thro' the Cloth to hold it together; but for any thing elſe I was as ignorant as ſhe. In much leſs Time than I could have imagined, ſhe had cloathed my Son *Pedro*, and had made a ſort of Mantle for the youngeſt. But now, ſeeing us ſo ſmart, (for I took upon me ſometimes to wear the green Waiſt-coat ſhe had brought, under my dirty Jacket) ſhe began to be aſhamed of herſelf, as ſhe ſaid, in our fine Company; and afterwards (as I ſhall ſoon acquaint you) got into our Faſhion.

Seeing the Advantages of her Flight to the Ship, and that ſo many Conveniencies aroſe from it, ſhe was frequently at me to let her go again. I ſhould as much have wiſhed for another Return of Goods, as ſhe, but I could by no Means think of parting with my Factor; for I knew her Eagerneſs to pleaſe me, and that ſhe would ſtick at nothing to perform it; and, thinks I, ſhould any Accident happen to her, by over loading, or otherwiſe, and I ſhould loſe her, all the other Commodities of the whole World put together would not compenſate her Loſs. But as ſhe ſo earneſtly deſired it, and aſſured me ſhe would run no hazards, I was prevailed on at length, by her inceſſant Importunities, to let her go; tho' under certain Reſtrictions, which ſhe promiſed me to comply with. As firſt, I inſiſted upon it, that ſhe ſhould take a Tour quite round the Rock; ſetting out the ſame way I had laſt gone with my Boat; and, if poſſible, find out the Gulph, which I told her ſhe could not miſtake, by reaſon of the Noiſe the Fall of the Water made; and deſired her to remark the Place, ſo as I might know, within Side, where it was without. And then, I told her, ſhe might re-

view

Tab II

The Back of a Glumm Dress.

view and ſearch every Hole in the Ship as ſhe pleas'd; and if there were any ſmall things ſhe had a Mind to bring from it, ſhe was welcome, provided the Bundle ſhe ſhould make up, was not above a fourth part either of the Bulk or Weight of the laſt. All which, ſhe having engaged punctually to obſerve, ſhe bid me not expect her 'till I ſaw her, and ſhe would return as ſoon as poſſible. I then went with her to the Confines of the Wood, (for I told her I deſired to ſee her mount) and ſhe, after we had embraced, bidding me to ſtand behind her, took her Flight.

CHAP. XX.

The Author obſerves her Flight; a Deſcription of a Glumm *in the* Graundee; *ſhe finds out the Gulph, not far from the Ship; brings Home more Goods; makes her a Gown by her Huſband's Inſtruction.*

I Had ever ſince our Marriage been deſirous of ſeeing *Youwarkee* fly, but this was the firſt Opportunity I had of it; and indeed the Sight was worthy of all the Attention I paid it; for I deſired her, ſlowly, to put herſelf in proper Order for it, that I might make my Obſervation the more accurately; and ſhall now give you an Account of the whole Apparatus: Tho' ſeveral Parts of the Deſcription were taken from ſubſequent Views; for it would have been impoſſible to have made juſt Remarks of every thing at that once, eſpecially as I only view'd her back Parts then.

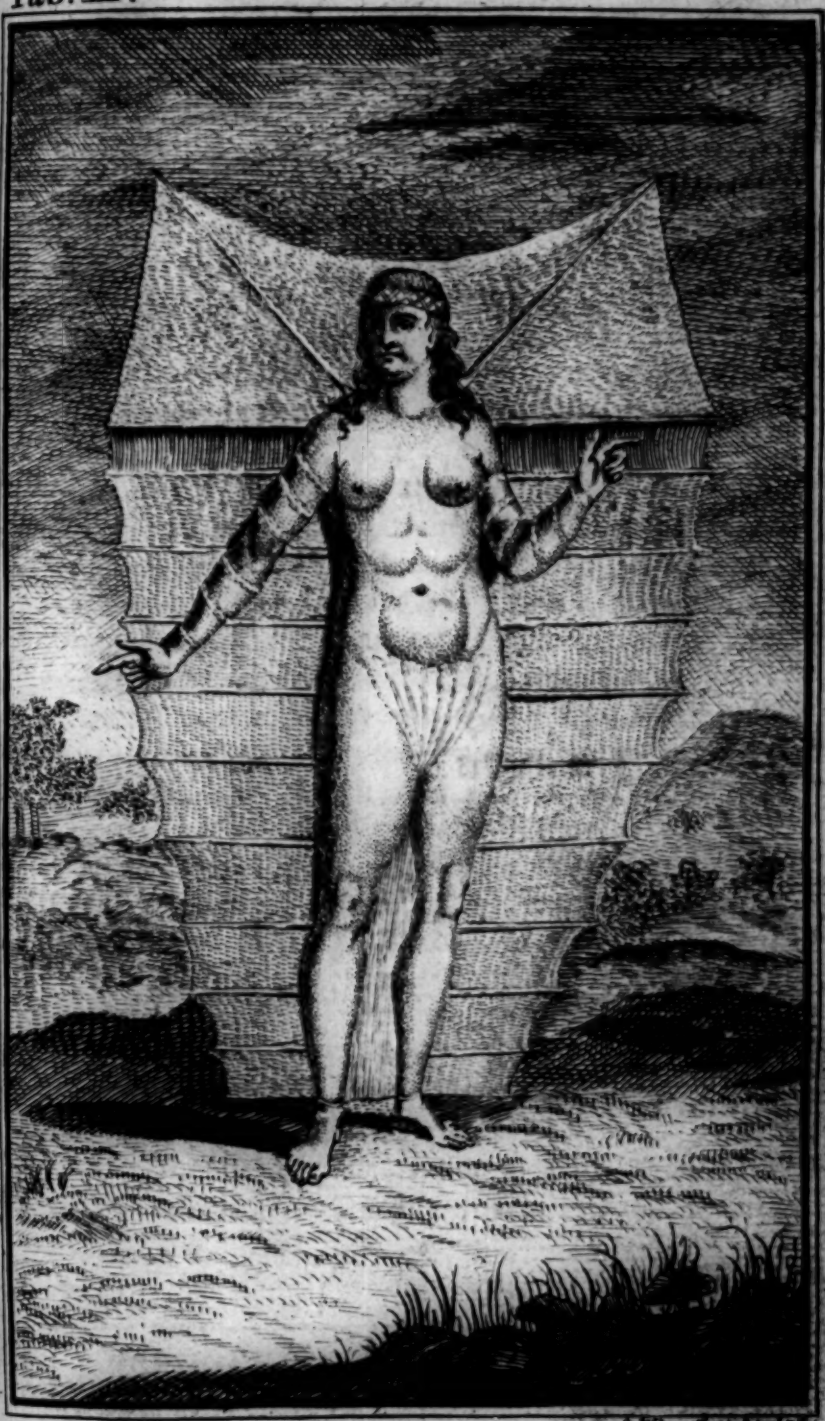
I told you before, I had ſeen her *Graundee* open, and quite extended, as low as her Middle; but that being in the Grotto, by Lamp-light, I could

could not take so just a Survey as now, when the Sort of Light we ever had was at the brightest.

She first threw up two long Branches or Ribs of the Whalebone, as I called it before, (and indeed, for several of its Properties, as Toughness, Elasticity, and Plyableness, nothing I have ever seen can so justly be compared to it) which were jointed behind to the upper Bone of the Spine, and which, when not extended, lie bent over the Shoulders, on each side of the Neck forwards, from whence, by nearer and nearer Approaches, they just meet at the lower Rim of the Belly, in a sort of Point; * but when extended, they stand their whole Length above the Shoulders, not perpendicularly, but spreading outwards, with a Webb of the softest and most plyable and springy Membrane, that can be imagined, in the Interspace between them, reaching from their Root or Joint on the Back, up above the hinder part of the Head, and near half way their own length; ‡ but, when closed, the Membrane falls down in the Middle, upon the Neck, like an Handkerchief †. There are also two other Ribs, rising as it were from the same Root, which, when open, run horizontally, but not so long as the others.‖ These are filled up, in the Interspace between them and the upper ones, with the same Membrane; and on the lower Side of this is also a deep Flap of the Membrane, so that the Arms can be either above or below it in Flight; and are always above it when closed. This last Rib, when shut, slaps under the upper one, and also falls down with it before, to the Waist, but is not join'd to the Ribs

* Plate I. ‡ Plate III. † Plate II.
‖ Plate III.

Tab. III.



J. Wheatley Sculp.

A Ganrey Extended for Flight.

Ribs below. Along the whole Spine-bone runs a ſtrong flat broad griſly Cartilage, to which are join'd ſeveral other of theſe Ribs; all which open horizontally, and are filled in the Interſpaces with the above Membrane, and are jointed to the Ribs of the Perſon juſt where the Plane of the Back begins to turn towards the Breaſt and Belly; and, when ſhut, wrap the Body round to the Joints on the contrary Side, folding neatly one Side over the other. At the lower Spine are two more Ribs, extended horizontally when open, jointed again to the Hips, and long enough to meet the Joint on the contrary ſide croſs the Belly; and from the Hip Joint, which is on the outermoſt Edge of the Hip-Bone, runs a plyable Cartilage quite down the outſide of the Thigh and Leg to the Ancle; from which there branch out divers other Ribs, horizontally alſo, when open, but when cloſed they encompaſs the whole Thigh and Leg, rolling inwards, croſs the back of the Leg and Thigh, till they reach and juſt cover the Cartilage. The Interſpaces of theſe are alſo filled up with the ſame Membrane. From the two Ribs which join to the lower Spine-bone there hangs down a ſort of ſhort Apron, very full of Plaits, from Hip Joint to Hip Joint, and reaches below the Buttocks, half way or more to the Hams. * This has alſo ſeveral ſmall limber Ribs in it. Juſt upon the lower Spine-Joint, and above the Apron, as I call it, there are two other long Branches, which, when cloſe, extend upon the Back, from the point they join at below to the Shoulders, where each Rib has a Claſper, which, reaching over the Shoulders, juſt

* Plate II.

just under the Fold of the uppermost Branch or Ribs, hold up the two Ribs flat to the Back, like a V; * the Interspaces of which are also filled up with the aforesaid Membrane. This last piece, in flight, falls down almost to the Ancles †; where the two Claspers lapping under each Leg, within side, hold it very fast; and then also the short Apron is drawn up, by the Strength of the Ribs in it, between the Thighs forward; and covers the Pudenda and Groin, as far as the Rim of the Belly. ‖ The whole Arms are covered also from the Shoulders to the Wrist with the same delicate Membrane, fastened to Ribs, of proportionable Dimensions, and jointed to a Cartilage on the outside, in the same Manner as on the Legs.

It is very surprizing to see the Difference of these Ribs when open, and when closed; for, closed, they are as plyable as the finest Whalebone, or more so, but when extended, are as strong and stiff as a Bone. They are tapering, from the Roots; and are broader or narrower, as best suits the Places they occupy and the Stress they are put to, up to their Points: which are almost as small as a Hair. The Membrane between them is the most elastic thing I ever met with; occupying no more Space, when the Ribs are closed than just from Rib to Rib, as flat and smooth as possible; but, when extended, in some Postures, will dilate itself surprizingly. This will be better comprehended by the Plates, as to the Machinery, where you will see several *Glumms* and *Gawnys* in different Attitudes, than can be exprest by Words.

As soon as my Wife had expanded the whole *Graundee*, being upon plain Ground, she stoop-

ed

* Plate II. † Plate IV. ‖ Plate III.

J. Wheatley Sculp.t

The Use of ye Back flap, when ye Glumm flyes

ed forward, moving with a heavy rigling motion at first, which put me into some Pain for her: but after a few Strokes, beginning to rise a little, she cut thro' the Air like Lightning; and was soon over the Edge of the Rock, and out of my Sight.

It is the most amazing thing in the World to observe the large Expansion of this *Graundee*, when open; and when closed, (as it all is in a Moment, upon the Party's descent) to see it sit so close and compact to the Body, as no Taylor can come up to it; and then the several Ribs lie so justly disposed in the several Parts, that instead of being, as one would imagine, a Disadvantage to the Shape, they make the Body and Limbs look extremely elegant; and by the different Adjustment of their Lines, on the Body and Limbs, the Whole, to my Fancy, somewhat resembles the Dress of the old Roman Warriors, in their Buskins; and to Appearance seems much more noble than any factitious Garb I ever saw, or can frame a Notion of to myself.

Tho' these People, in Height, Shape, and Limb, very much resemble the *Europeans*, there is yet this Difference; that their Bodies are rather broader and flatter, and their Limbs, tho' as long, and well shaped, are seldom so thick as ours: And this I observed generally in all I saw of them, during a long time among them afterwards: But their Skin, for Beauty and Fairness, exceeds ours very much.

My Wife having now taken her second Flight, I went home, and never left my Children 'till her Return. This was three Days after our parting. I was in Bed, with my little ones, when she knocked at the Door. I soon let her in, and we received each other with a glowing welcome.

The

The News ſhe brought me was very agreeable. She told me, ſhe firſt went and pryed into every Nook in the Ship; where ſhe had ſeen ſuch things could we get at them, as would make us very happy. Then ſhe ſet out the way I told her to go, in order to find the Gulph. She was much afraid ſhe ſhould not have diſcovered it, tho' ſhe flew very ſlow, that ſhe might be ſure to hear the Water-fall, and not over-ſhoot it. It was long e're ſhe came at it; but when ſhe did, ſhe perceiv'd ſhe might have ſpared moſt of her Trouble, had ſhe ſet out the other way; for after ſhe had flown almoſt round the Iſland, and not before, ſhe began to hear the Fall, and upon coming up to it, found it to be not above ſix Minutes flight from the Ship. She ſaid, the Entrance was very narrow, and, ſhe thought, lower than I repreſented it; for ſhe could ſcarce diſcern any Space between the Surface of the Water and the Arch-way of the Rock. I told her, that might happen from the riſe or fall of the Sea itſelf. But I was glad to hear the Ship was no farther from the Gulph; for my Head was never free from the Thoughts of my Ship and Cargoe. She then told me, ſhe had left a ſmall Bundle for me without the Wood, and went to look after her Children. I brought up the Bundle: And tho' it was not near ſo large as the other, I found ſeveral uſeful things in it, wrapped up in four or five Yards of dark blue Woollen Cloth, which I knew no Name for, but which was thin and light, and about a Yard wide. I aſked her where ſhe met with this Stuff? She anſwered, where there was more of it, under a thing like our Bed, in a Cloth like our Sheet, which ſhe cut open, and took it out of. Well, ſays I, and what will you do with this? Why, I will make me a Coat, like yours, ſays ſhe, for I don't like to look different from my

dear

dear Husband and Children. No *Youwarkee*, replied I, you must not do so; if you make such a Jacket as mine, there will be no Distinction between *Glumn* and *Gawry* *; the *Gawren Praave* †, in my Country, would not on any Account go dressed like a *Glumm*; for they wear a fine flowing Garment, called a Gown, that sits tight about the Waist, and hangs down from thence in folds, like your *Barras* §, almost to the Ground, so that you can hardly discern their Feet, and no other part of their Body but their Hands and Face, and about as much of their Necks and Breasts as you see in your *Graundee*.

Youwarkee seemed highly delighted with this new fancied Dress, and worked Day and Night at it, against the cold Weather. Whilst she employed herself thus, I was busied in providing my Winter Stores; which I was forced to do alone now, herself and Children taking up all my Wife's time. About a Fortnight after she had began Mantuamaking, she presented herself to me one Day, as I came from Work, in her new Gown. And truly, considering the scanty Description I had given her of such a Garment, it appeared a good comely Dress. Tho' it had not one Plait about the Body, it sat very tight thereto, and yet hung down full enough for a Countess: for she would have put it all in, all the Stuff she had, had there been as much more of it. I could see no Opening before, so asked her how she got it on. She told me, she laid along on the Ground, and crept thro' the Plaits at the Bottom, and sewed the Body round her, after she had got her Hands and Arms thro' the Sleeves. I wondered at her Contrivance, and smiling, shew'd her how

* Man and Woman.
† Modest Women.
§ The black Flap of the *Graundee*

how ſhe ſhould put it on, and alſo how to pin it before; and after ſhe had done that, and I had turned up about half a Yard of Sleeve, which then hung down to her Fingers Ends, I kiſſed her, and called her my Country Woman, of which and her new Gown ſhe was very proud for a long time.

CHAP. XXI.

The Author gets a Breed of Poultry, and by what means; builds them an Houſe; how he managed to keep them in Winter.

ONE Day as I was traverſing the Woods, to view my Bird-traps, looking into the Underwood, among the great Trees on my right Hand, I ſaw a Wood Hen (a Bird I uſed to call ſo, from its Reſemblance in Make to our *Engliſh* Poultry) come out of a little Thicket. I know not whether my Ruſtling or what, had diſturbed it, but I let her paſs, and ſhe ran away before me. When ſhe was fairly out of ſight, I ſtepped up, and found ſhe had a Neſt and ſixteen Eggs there. I exactly marked the Place; and taking away one of the Eggs, I broke it, at ſome diſtance from the Neſt, to ſee how forward they were; and I had no ſooner broke the Shell, but out came a young Chicken. I then looked into the Neſt again, and taking up more of the Eggs, I found them all juſt ſplintered in the Shell, and ready for Hatching. I had immediately a Deſire to ſave them, and bring them up tame; but I was afraid if I took them away before they were hatched, and a little ſtrengthened under the Hen, they would all die, ſo I let them remain 'till next Day.

Day. In rhe mean while I prepared ſome ſmall Netting, of ſuch a proper Size, as I conceived would do; and with this I contrived, by faſtning it to Stakes which I fixed in the Ground, to ſurround the Neſt, and me on the outſide of it. All the while I was doing this the Hen did not ſtir, ſo that I thought ſhe had either been abſent when I came, or had hatched and gone off with the young ones. As to her being gone, I was under no Concern, for I had no Deſign to catch her, but only to confine the Chickens within my Net, if they were hatched. But however I went nearer, and peeping in, found ſhe ſat ſtill, ſqueezing herſelf as flat to the Ground as ſhe could. I was in twenty Minds whether to take her firſt, and then catch the Chickens, or to let her go off, and then clap upon them; but as I propoſed to let her go, I thought, if ſhe would ſit ſtill 'till I had got the Chickens, that would be the beſt Way. So I ſoftly kneeled down before her, and ſliding my Hand under her, I gently drew out two, and put them in a Bag I had in my left Hand. I then dipped again and again, taking two every turn. But going a fourth time, as I was bringing out my Prize, the Hen jumped up, flew out, and made ſuch a Noiſe, that tho' I the Minute before ſaw ſix or ſeven more Chicks in a Lump, where ſhe had ſat, and kept my Eye upon them, yet before I could put the laſt two I had got into my Bag, theſe were all gone, and in three Hours ſearch I could not find one of them; tho' I was ſure they could not paſs my Net, and muſt be within the compaſs of a ſmall Room, my Toils incloſing no more: After tiring myſelf with looking for them, I marched home with thoſe eight I had got.

I told

I told *Youwarkee* what I had done, and how I intended to manage the little Brood, and, if I could, to bring them up tame. We kept them ſome Days very warm, by the Fire, and fed them often, as I had ſeen my Mother do with her early Chickens; and in a Fortnight's time they were as ſtout and familiar as common Poultry. We kept them a long while in the Houſe; and when I fed them I always uſed them to a particular Whiſtle, which I alſo taught my Wife, that they might know both us and their feeding time; and in a very ſhort while they would come running upon the uſual Sound, like Barn-door Fowls to the Name of Biddy.

There happened in this Brood to be five Hens and three Cocks; and they were now ſo tame, that having cut their Wings, I let them out, when the Weather favoured, at my Door; where they would pick about in the Wood, and get beſt part of their Subſiſtance; and having uſed them to rooſt in a Corner of my Antichamber, they all came in very regularly at Night, and took their places. My Hens, at the uſual Seaſon, laid me Abundance of Eggs, and hatched me a Brood or two, each of Chickens; ſo that now I was at a Loſs to know what to do with them, they were become ſo numerous. The Antichamber was no longer a proper Receptacle of ſuch a Flock, and therefore I built a little Houſe at a ſmall Diſtance from my own, on purpoſe for their Reception and Entertainment. I had by this Time cleared a Spot of Ground, on one ſide of my Grotto, by burning up the Timber and Underwood which had covered it; this I inclos'd, and within that Incloſure I raiſed my Aviary; and my Poultry thrived very well there, ſeem'd to like their Habitation, and grew very fat.

My

My Wife and I took much Delight in visiting and feeding 'em, and it was a fine Diversion also to my Boys; but at the end of Summer, when all the other Birds took their annual Flight, away went every one of my new raised Brood with them, and one of my old Cocks, the rest of the old Set remaining very quiet with me all the Winter. The next Summer, when my Chicks of that Year grew up a little, I cut their Wings, and by that Means preserved all but one; which I suppose was either not cut so close as the rest, or his Wings had grown again. From this Time I found by long Experience, that not two, out of an hundred that had once wintered with me, would ever go away, tho' I did not cut their Wings; but all of the same Season would certainly go off with the wild ones, if they could any ways make a Shift to fly. I afterwards got a Breed of Blacknecks; which was a Name I gave them from the peculiar Blackness of their Necks, let the rest of their Bodies be of what Colour they would as they are indeed of all Colours. These Birds were as big or bigger than a Turkey, of a delicious Flavour, and were bred from Turkey Eggs, hatched under my own wood Hens, in great Plenty. I was forced to clip these, as I did the other young Fowl, to keep 'em; and at length they grew very tame, and would return every Night during the dark Season. The greatest Difficulty now was, to get Meat for all these Animals, in the Winter, when they would sit on the Roost two Days together, if I did not call and feed them; which I was sometimes forced to do by Lamp-light, or they would have starved in cloudy Weather. But I overcame that want of Food by an accidental Discovery; for I observ'd my Blacknecks, in the Woods, jump many times

times together at a ſort of little round Heads or Pods, very dry, which hung plentifully upon a Shrub that grew in great Abundance there. I cut ſeveral of theſe Heads, and carrying them home with me broke them, and took out a Spoonful or more from each Head of ſmall yellow Seeds; which giving to my Poultry, and finding they greedily devoured them, I ſoon laid in a Stock for twice my Number of Mouths; ſo that they never after wanted. I tried ſeveral times to raiſe a Breed of Water Fowl, by hatching their Eggs under my Hens; but not one in ten of the Sorts when hatched, were fit to eat; and thoſe that were, would never live and thrive with me, but got away to the Lake, I having no ſort of Water nearer me: ſo I dropped my Deſign of Water Fowl as impracticable. But by breeding and feeding my Land Fowl ſo conſtantly in my Farm-Yard, I never wanted of that ſort at my Table; where we eat Abundance of them: for my whole ſide of the Lake, in a few Years, was like a Farm-Yard, ſo full of Poultry, that I never knew my Stock; and upon the uſual Whiſtle they would flock round me from all Quarters. I had every thing now but Cattle, not only for the Support, but Convenience and Pleaſure of Life; and ſo happily ſhould I have fared here, if I had had but a Cow and Bull, a Ram and Sheep, that I would not have changed my Dominions for the Crown of *England*.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

Reflections on Mankind; the Author wants to be with his Ship; projects going, but perceives it impracticable; Youwarkee *offers her Service, and goes; an Account of her Transactions on Board; Remarks on her Sagacity; she dispatches several Chests of Goods through the Gulph to the Lake; an Account of a Danger she escaped; the Author has a Fit of Sickness.*

STrange is the Temper of Mankind, who, the more they enjoy, the more they covet. Before I received any Return from my Ship, I rested tolerably easy, and but seldom thought upon what I had left behind me in her; thinking myself happy in what I had, and compleatly so, since my Union with my dear Wife. But after I had got what I could never have expected, I grew more and more perplexed for want of the rest; and thought I should never enjoy true Happiness while even a Plank of the Ship remained. My Head, be I where I would, or at what I would, was ever on board. I wished for her in the Lake, and could I but have got her thither, I thought I should be an Emperor. And tho' I wanted for nothing to maintain Life, and had so good a Wife and five Children I was very fond of; yet the one thing I had not, reduced the Comfort of all the rest to a scanty Pattern, even so low as to destroy my whole Peace. I was even mad enough to think of venturing up the Cavern again, but was restrained from the Attempt by the certain Impracticableness of it. Then I thought *Youwarkee* should make another Trip to the Ship: But what can she bring from it, says I

to

to myself, in respect of what must be left behind? Her whole Life won't suffice to clear it in, at the Rate she can fetch the Loading hither, in Parcels. At last a Project started; that as there were so many Chests on Board, *Yowarkee* should fill some of them, and send them through the Gulph to take their Chance for the Lake. This, at first Sight, seemed feasable; but then I considered, how they could be got from the Ship to the Gulph; and, again, that they would never keep out the Water, and if they fill'd, with a lading in them, they would sink; or, if this did not happen, they might be dashed to pieces against the Craggs in the Cavern. These Apprehensions stopped me again; 'till, unwilling to quit the Thought, true, says I, this may happen to some, but if I get but one in five, it is better than nothing. Thus I turned and wound the Affair in my Mind; but Objections still started, too obstinate to be conquered.

In the Height of my Soliloquy, in comes *Yowarkee*; and seing my dejected Look, would needs know the meaning of it. I told her plainly, that I could get no Rest from Day to Day, ever since she first went to the Ship, to think such a Number of good Things lay there to be a Prey to the Sea, as the Ship wasted, when they might be of such infinite Service here; and that since her last Flight I had suffered the more, when I thought how near the Gulph was to the Ship! So that could I but get thither myself, with my Boat, I would contrive to pack up the Goods in the Chests that were on Board, and, carrying them in the Boat, drop them near the Draft of the Water, which of itself would suck them under the Rock, down the Gulph; and when they were passed thro' the Cavern, I might take them

up in the Lake. Well, says she, *Peter*, and why can't I do this for you? No, says I, even this has its Objections. Then I told her what I feared of their taking Water, or dashing against the Rock, and twenty other ways of frustrating my Views; but above all, says I, how can you get such large and weighty Things to the Gulph without a Boat? There is another Impossibility! it won't do.

Youwarkee eyed me attentively. Prithee, my dear *Peter*, says she, set your Heart at rest about that. I can only try? if no good is to be done, you shall soon know it, and must rest contented under the Disappointment. I told her, if I was there, I could take all the Things out of the Chest, and then melt some Pitch, and pour into every Crack, to keep out the Water, when they were set afloat. Pitch, says she, what's that? Why, says I, that is a nasty, hard, black, sticking Thing, that stands in Tubs in the Ship; and which being put over the Fire, in any Thing to melt, will gow liquid; and, when it is cold, be hard again; and will resist the Water and keep it out. Says she, how can I put this Pitch within side of the Chest Lid, when I have tied it up? It is to no manner of Purpose, says I, to talk of it, so there's an End of it. But, says she, suppose yourself there, what Things would you bring first? I then entered into a long Detail of Particulars, saying, I would have this and that, and so on, 'till I had scarce left out a Thing I either knew of or could suppose to be in the Ship; and for fear I had not mentioned all, says I, at last, if I was there, I believe I should leave but little portable behind me.

So, so, my dear, says *Youwarkee*, you would roll in Riches, I find, but you have mentioned

never a new Gown for me. Why ay, ſays I, I would have that too. But how would you melt the Pitch? ſays ſhe. O, ſays I, there is a Tinder-Box and Matches, in a Room below, upon the Side of the Fire Hearth; and then I let her ſee one I had brought with me, and ſhewed her the Uſe of the Flint and Steel. Well, my Dear, ſays ſhe, will you once more truſt me? I told her, her going would be of little more Uſe than to get a ſecond Gown, or ſome ſuch Thing; but if ſhe was deſirous, I would let her make another Flight, on her Promiſe to be back as ſoon as poſſible.

In the Evening ſhe ſee out, and ſtayed two Days, and till the Night of the third. I would here obſerve, that tho' it was much lighter and brighter on the outſide of the Rock, where the Ship lay, than with us at *Graundevolet*, yet, having always her Spectacles with her, I heard no more Complaint of the Glare of Light ſhe uſed to be ſo much afraid of: Indeed ſhe always avoided the Fire and Lamp at home, as much as ſhe could; becauſe ſhe generally took off her Spectacles within Doors; but when at any Time ſhe had them on, ſhe could bear both well enough.

Upon her Return again, ſhe told me ſhe had ſhipped ſome Goods to Sea for me, which ſhe hoped would arrive ſafe, (for by this Time, ſhe had had my ſeafaring Terms ſo often over, ſhe could apply them very properly) and that they were in ſix Cheſts, which ſhe had pitched after my Directions. Ay, ſays I, you have pitched them into the Sea, perhaps, but after my Directions, I am ſatisfied, was beyond your Ability. You *Glumms*, ſays ſhe, think us *Gawrys* very ignorant, but I'll ſatisfy you we are not ſo dull of Apprehenſion as you would make us; did not

you

you ſhew me, one Day, how your Boat was tarred and caulked as you call it? I did, ſays I, what then? I'll tell you, ſays ſhe. When I had emptied the firſt Cheſt, and ſet it properly, I looked about for your Pitch, which, at laſt, I found by its ſticking to my Fingers; I then put a good Piece into a ſort of a little Kettle, with a long Handle, that lay upon the Pitch——O, the Pitch Ladle, ſays I.—I know not what you call it, ſays ſhe, but then, I made a Fire, as you told me, and melted that Stuff; afterwards turning up the Cheſt ſideways, and then endways, I poured it into it, and let it ſettle in the Cracks, and with an old Stocking, ſuch as yours, dipped into the Pitch, I rubbed every Place where the Boards joined. I then ſet the Cheſt on the Side of the Ship, and when the Pitch was cold and hardened in it, filled it top full of Things. But when I had done thus, and ſhut the Lid, I found that would not come ſo cloſe, but I could get the Blade of a Knife thro, any where between it and the Cheſt; whereupon, I cut ſome long Slips of the Cloth I was packing up, and fitting them all round the Edge of the Cheſt, I dipped them into the Pitch, and laid them on hot; and where one Slip would not do, I put two; and ſhutting the Lid down cloſe upon them, I nailed it, as I had ſeen you do ſome Things, quite, round; then tying a Rope to the Handle, I tipped the Cheſt into the Sea, holding the Rope; I watched it ſome Time, and ſeeing it ſwim well, I took flight with the Rope in my Hand, and drew the Cheſt after me to the Gulph, when, letting go the Rope, away it went. I ſerved five more in the ſame Manner. And now my deareſt, I am here to tell you, I hope you will be able to ſee at leaſt ſome of them, one time or other, in the Lake.

I admired in all this at the Sagacity of the *Gawrys*. Alas! thinks I, what narrow hearted Creatures are Mankind? Did I not heretofore look upon the poor Blacks in *Africa* as little better than Beasts, 'till my Friend *Glandlipze* convinced me, by disabling the Crocodile, the Passage of the River, and several other Atchievements, that my own Excellencies might have perished in a Desert, without his Genius; and now what could I, or almost any of us Masterpieces of the Creation (as we think ourselves) and Heavens peculiar Favourites have done, in this present Case, that has been omitted by this Woman, (for I may justly stile her so in an eminent Degree) and that in a way to which she was bred an utter Stranger.

After what I had heard from *Youwarkee*, I grew much more chearful; which she (poor Creature) was remarkably pleased with. She went with me constantly once, and sometimes twice, a Day, for several Days together, to see what Success at the Lake; 'till at length she grew very impatient, for fear, as she afterwards told me, I should either think she had not done what she said, or had done it in an ineffectual Manner. But one Day, walking by the Lake, I thought I saw something floating in the Water, at a very great Distance. *Youwarkee*, says I, I spy a Sail, then running to my Boat, and taking her in, away we went, plying my Oars with all my Might, for I longed to see what it was. At nearer View I perceived it to be one of my Wife's Fleet. But what added to my Satisfaction, was to see *Youwarkee* so pleased, for she could scarcely contain herself.

When we came close to it, up she started; now, my dear *Peter*, says she, torment yourself

no

no more about your Goods on Board, for if this will do, all ſhall be your own. She then lent me a Hand to take it in; but we had both Work enough to compaſs it, the Wood had ſoaked in ſo much Water. We then made the beſt of our way homewards to my wet Dock; when, juſt as we had landed our Treaſure, we ſaw two more Boxes coming down the Stream, both together; whereupon we launched again, and brought them in, one by one: For I did not care to truſt them both on one Bottom, my Boat being in Years and growing ſomewhat crazy.

We had now made a good Day's Work of it; ſo, mooring the Boat, we went home, intending to be out next Morning early with the Cart, to convey our Imports to the Grotto.

After Supper, *Youwarkee*, looking very earneſtly at me, with Tears juſt glittering in her Eyes, broke out in theſe Words, What ſhould you have thought, *Peter*, to have ſeen me come ſailing, drowned, thro' the Cavern, tied to one of your Cheſts? Heaven forbid ſuch a Thought! my Charmer, ſays I. But, as you know I muſt have been rendered the moſt miſerable of all living Creatures by ſuch a Sight, or any Thing elſe that would deprive me of you; pray tell me how you could poſſibly have ſuch a Thought in your Head? She ſaw ſhe had raiſed my Concern, and was very ſorry for what ſhe had ſaid. Nothing, nothing, ſays ſhe, my Dear; it was only a Fancy juſt come into my Head. My dear *Youwee*, ſays I, you muſt let me know what you mean; I am in great Pain till you explain yourſelf: for I am ſure there is ſomething more in what you ſay than Fancy; therefore, pray, if you love me, keep me on the Rack no longer. Ah! *Peter*, ſays ſhe, there was but a Span be-

tween me and Death, not many Days ago; and when I saw the Line of the last Chest we took up just now, it gave me so much Horror, I could scarce keep upon my Feet. My Dear *Youwee*, proceed, says I, for I can't bear my Torment 'till I have heard the worst. Why, *Peter*, says she, now the Danger is over, I shall tell you my Escape, with as much Pleasure as I guess you will take in hearing of it. You must know, my Life, says she, that having cast that Chest into the Sea, as I was tugging it along, by that very Line, it being one of the heaviest, and moving but slowly, I twisted the String several Times round my Hand, one Fold upon another, the easier to tow it; when, drawing it rather too quick into the Eddy, it pulled so hard against me, towards the Gulph, and so quick, that I could no way loosen or disengage the Cord from my Fingers, but was dragg'd thereby to the very Rock; against which the Chest struck violently: My last Thought, as I supposed it, was of you my Dear, (on which she clasped me round the Neck, in sense of her past Agony;) when, taking myself for lost, I forbore further Resistance; at which Instant the Line, slackning by the Rebound of the Chest, fell from my Hand of itself; and the Chest, returning to the Rock, went down the Current. I took a Turn or two round on my Graundee, to recollect my past Danger, and went back to the Ship, fully resolved to avoid the like Snare for the future. Indeed I did not easily recover my Spirits, and was so terrify'd with the Thought, that I had half a Mind to have left the two remaining Chests behind me: But as Danger overcome gives fresh Resolution, I again set to work, and discharged them also down the Gulph, as I hope you will see in good Time.

My

My Heart bled within me all the while ſhe ſpoke; and I even felt ten Times more than ſhe could have ſuffered by the Gulph. My dereſt *Youwee*, ſays I, why did not you tell me this Adventure ſooner? It is too ſoon I fear now, ſays ſhe; for ſhe then ſaw the Colour forſake my Lips, my Eyes grow languid, and myſelf dropping into her Arms. She ſcreamed out, and ran to the Cheſt, where all was empty; but turning every Bottle up, and, from the remaining Drops in each, collecting a ſmall Quantity of Liquor, and putting it by little and little to my Lips, and rubbing my Wriſts and Temples, ſhe brought me to myſelf again: But I continued ſo extreamly ſick for ſome Days after, that it was above a Week before I could get down with my Cart to fetch up my Cheſts.

When I was able to go down, *Youwarkee* would not venture me alone, but went herſelf with me. We then found two more of the Cheſts, which we landed; and I had Work ſufficient for two or three Days, in getting them all up to the Grotto, they were ſo heavy, and all the way thro' the Wood being up Hill.

We had five in Hand, and watched ſeveral Days for the ſixth, when ſeeing nothing of it, we gave it over for loſt. But one Day, as I was going for Water *Youwarkee* would go with me, and urged our carrying the Net, that we might drag for ſome Fiſh. Accordingly we did ſo. And now having taken what we wanted, we went to the Rill, and puſhing in the Head of the Boat (as I uſually did, for by that Means I could fill the Veſſel as I ſtood on board) the firſt Thing that appeared was my ſixth Cheſt. *Youwarkee* ſpyed it firſt, and cry'd, pointing thereto, O *Peter*, what we have long wiſhed for, and almoſt deſ-

paired of, is come at last; let us meet and welcome it. I was pleas'd with the Gayety of her Fancy; I did as she desired; we got it into the Boat, after merrily saluting it, and so returned home. It took us up several Days time in searching, sorting, and disposing our Cargoe, and drying the Chests: For the Goods themselves were so far from being wetted or spoiled, that even those in the last Chest, which had lain so long in the Water, had not taken the least Moisture.

Youwarkee was quite alert at the Success of her packing, but left me to ring her Praises; which I did not fail of doing more than once, at unpacking each Chest, and could see her Eyes glow with Delight to see she had so pleased me.

She had been so curious as to examine almost every Thing in the Ship; and as well of Things I had described, and she did know, as of what she did not, brought me something for a Sample: But, above all had not forgot the blue Stuff; for the Moment she had seen that, she destin'd it to the Use of herself and Children.

CHAP. XXIII.

The Religion of the Author's Family.

YOUWARKEE and I having fixed ourselves by Degrees into a settled Rota of Action, began to live like Christians; having so great a Quantity of most Sorts of Necessaries about us. But I say we lived like Christians, on another Account; for you must not think, after what I have said before, that I and my Family lived like Heathens: No, I'll assure you, they, by Degrees, knew all I knew; and that, with a little

little artificial Improvement, and a well regulated Disposition, I hoped, and did not doubt, would carry them all to Heaven. I would many a Time have given all my Interest in the Ship's Cargoe for a Bible; and a hundred Times grev'd that I was not Master of a Pocket one, which I might have carried every where about me. I never imagin'd there was one aboard; and if there were, and *Youwarkee* should find it, I suppos'd it would be in *Portugueze*, which I knew little of; so it would be of small Service to me, if I had it.

Since I am upon the Topic of Religion, it may not be amiss, once for all, to give you a small Sketch of my religious Proceedings, after coming into my new Dominions. I have already told you, that, from my first Stop at the Rock, I had prayed constantly Morning and Evening; but I can't say I did it always with the same Efficacy. However, my imperfect Devotions were not without good Effect: And I am confident, wherever this Course is pursued with a right View, sooner or later the Issue will prove the same to others as I found it to myself:—— I mean, that Mercies will be remembred with more Gratitude, and Evils be more disregarded, and become less burthensome: And surely the Person whose Case this is, must necessarily enjoy the truest Relish of Life. As daily Prayer was my Practice, in answer to it I obtained the greatest Blessing and Comfort my Solitude was capable of receiving: I mean my Wife; whose Character I need not farther attempt to blazon, in any faint Colours of my own, after what has been already said; her Acts having spoken her Virtues beyond all verbal Description.

After we were married, as I call it, that is, after we had agreed to become Man and Wife, I frequently prayed before her, and with her, (for by this Time ſhe underſtood a good Deal of my Language;) at which, tho' contrary to my Expectation, ſhe did not ſeem ſurpriſed, but readily kneeled by, and joined with me. This I liked very well. And upon my aſking her one Day after Prayer, if ſhe underſtood what I had been doing, (for I had a Notion ſhe did not) Yes, verily, ſays ſhe, you have been making Petitions to the Image of the great *Collwar* *. Pray, ſays I, (willing gently to lead her into a juſt Senſe of a ſupreme Being) who is this *Collwar?* And where does he dwell? He it is, ſays ſhe, that does all Good and Evil to us. Right, ſays I, it is in ſome Meaſure ſo; but he can't of himſelf do Evil, abſolutely and properly, as his own Act. Yes, ſays ſhe, he can; for he can do all that can be done; and as Evil can be done, he can do it. So quick a Reply ſtartled me. Thinks I, ſhe will run me a Ground preſently; and from being a Doctor, as I fancy'd myſelf, I ſhall become but a Pupil to my own Scholar. I then aſked her where the great *Collwar* dwelt? She told me in Heaven, in a charming Place. And can he know what we do, ſays I? Yes, reply'd ſhe, his Image tells him every Thing; and I have prayed to his Image, which I have often ſeen; and it is filled with ſo much Virtue, that it is his ſecond Self: For there is only one of them in the World; who is ſo good, he gives ſeveral Virtues to other Images of himſelf, which are brought to him, and put into his Arms to breath upon; and the only Thing I have ever regretted ſince I knew you, is, that I have not one of them here to comfort and bleſs us and our Children.

Tho'

* God.

Tho' I was sorry for the Oddity of her Conceptions, I was almost glad to find her so ignorant; and pleased myself with thinking, that as she had already a confused Notion of a supreme Power, I should soon have the Satisfaction of bringing her to a more rational Knowledge of him.

Pray, *Youwee*, says I, what is your God made of? Why of Clay, says she, finely painted; and looks so terrible, he would make you tremble to behold him. Do you think, says I, that is the true *Collwar*'s real Shape, if you could see himself? She told me yes; for that some of his best Servants had seen him, and took the Representation from himself. And, pray, do you think he loves his best Servants, as you call them, and is kind to them? You need not doubt it, says she. Why then, reply'd I, how came he to look so terrible upon them, when they saw him, as you say they did? For I can see no Reason, how terrible soever he looks to others, why he should shew himself so to those he loves. I should rather think, as you say he is kind to them, that he should have two Images, a placid one for his good, and a terrible one for his bad, Servants. Or else, who by seeing him, can tell whether he is pleased or angry? For even you yourself, *Youwee*, when any Thing pleases you, have a different Look from that you have when you are angry; and little *Pedro* can tell whether he does well or ill, by your Countenance. Whereas, if you made no Distinction, but looked with the same Face on all his Actions, he would as readily think he did well as ill in committing a bad Action. *Youwarkee* could not tell what to say to this, the Fact seeming against her.

I then

I then asked her, if she thought the Image itself could hear her Petitions? She reply'd, yes. And can he, says I, return you an Answer? She told me, he only did that to his best Servants. Did you ever hear him do it? says I: For unless he can speak too, I should much suspect his hearing; and you being one of his best Servants, seeing you love him, and pray heartily to him, why should you not hear him as soon as others? No, says she, there are a great Number of *Glumms* on purpose to serve him, pray for us to him, and receive his Answers. But to what Purpose then, says I, is your praying to him, if their Prayers will serve your Turn? O, says she, the Image hears them sooner than us, and sends the Petitions up to the great *Collwar*, and lets him know who makes them, and desires him to let them have what they want. But suppose, says I, for Argument sake, that you could see the great *Collwar*, or know where he was, and should pray to himself, without going about to his Image first; do you think he could not hear you? I can't tell that, says she. But how then, says I, can he tell what (if it could speak) his Image says, which is as far from him as you are? And, pray, do you think he can hear an Image which he did not make, which could not make itself, and which can neither hear, nor see, nor speak; better than he can hear a *Glumm* whom he did make, and who made that Image, and who himself can hear, and see, and speak to him? She paused here a good while. At last, says she, Why, truly, I cannot think but he might as well, or better, hear me than the Image. Why then, said I, don't you make your Petitions to himself, and not to the Image? It is for the Reason I have given you, my Dear *Youwarkee*, that I pray to him, and not to his

Image

Image, or any Representation of him upon Earth; and, consequently, am more sure of being heard and answered. Indeed, says she, I never thought of that before; for our *Ragans* * always charged me to pray to the Image; or to let them know what I wanted, and they would pray to him for me; and they have had many a *Rappin* † of me for so doing, and sometimes two or three, when they told me I should have what I wanted: But you have convinced me it is better to pray to himself, and I shall always do it hereafter.

Having conducted my Scholar thus far, I left off, thinking I had now laid a solid Basis, that I need be in no Fear for my Superstructure: And as the slower you build, the firmer it settles; I thought fit to let this first Work settle into a firm Principle, before I raised any further Doctrine upon it, which, as Occasion offered, I determined to pursue. I propagated no theological Notions in my Children, 'till they were capable of conceiving the Truth of them from Principles of Reason; but only inculcated on them Justice, Truth, and Love to myself, their Mother, and each other. Having brought my Wife firmly to believe in a supreme Being (let her call him what she would) who could hear our Prayers, see our Actions, and answer our Petitions as he sees fit; and to an Assurance that his Love to us is so great, that he will do what is most beneficial for us, tho' it should not always prove what we think so; the great Truths, concerning his Dispensations in our Creation and Redemption, and our Duty towards

* Priests, or holy Men.

† Cake of Marmalade.

wards him, follow'd of course, as direct Consequences of such his Love and Knowledge of us; and she easily came into 'em. Accordingly, I opened the Doctrine of the Creation to her as well as I could, I am sorry to say, my Explication of this great Point was not so just, so particular, and clear as it might have been, if I had had a Bible; any more than was the succeeding History of our Redemption: However, in general, I explained both so effectually, that tho' it required Time to ground her in the full practical Faith of it, yet the Opinion she had of me, and my Fidelity to her, with the Reasons I was able to urge for what I taught her, persuaded her I was in the Right, and disposed her to hearken to what I delivered; and then her own zealous Application with God's Grace, soon brought her to a firm Belief in it, and a suitable Temper and Conduct with respect to God and Man.

After I had began with my Children, I frequently referred their further Instruction to their Mother; for I have always experienced, that a superficial Knowledge, with a Desire of becoming a Teacher, is, in some Measure, equivalent to better Knowledge: For it not only excites every Principle one has to the utmost, but makes Matters more clear and conspicuous even to ones self.

By these Means, and the divine Blessing thereon, in a few Years I may fairly say, I had a little Christian Church in my own House, and in a flourishing Way too, without a *Schismatick* or *Heretick* amongst us.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

The Author's Account of his Children; their Names; they are exercised in Flying; his Boat crazy; Youwarkee *intends a Visit to her Father, but first takes another Flight to the Ship; sends a Boat and Chests thro' the Gulph; cloaths her Children; is with Child again, so her Visit is put off; an Inventory of the last Freight of Goods; the Author's Method of treating his Children;* Youwarkee, *her Son* Tommy, *with her Daughters,* Patty *and* Hallicarnie, *set out to her Father's.*

I Had now lived here almost fourteen Years; and besides the three Sons before-mentioned, had three Girls and one Boy. *Pedro*, my eldest, had the *Graundee*, but too small to be useful; my second Son *Tommy*, had it compleat; so had my three Daughters; but *Jemmy* and *David*, the youngest Sons, none at all. My eldest Daughter I named *Patty*, because I always called my first Wife so; I say, my first Wife, tho' I had no other Knowledge of her Death than my Dream; but am from that as verily persuaded, if ever I reach *England* I shall find it so, as if I had heard it from her Aunt's own Mouth. My second Daughter my Wife desired might be called by her Sister's Name, *Hallicarnie*; and my youngest I named *Sarah*, after my Mother. I put you to the Trouble of writing down the Names, for as I shall hereafter have frequent Occasion to mention the Children severally, it will be pleasanter for myself and you to call them by their several Names of Distinction, than to call them

them my second Son, or my eldest Daughter, and so forth.

My Wife now took great Delight in exercising *Tommy* and *Patty* (who were big enough to be trusted) in Flight, and would often skim round the whole Island with them before I could walk half thro' the Wood. And she would teach them also to swim or sail; I know not which to call it, for sometimes you should see them dart out of the Air, as if they would fall on their Faces into the Lake, when, coming near the Surface, they would stretch their Legs in an horizontal Posture, and in an Instant turn on their Backs, and then you could see nothing from the Bank, to all Appearance, but a Boat sailing along, the *Graundee* rising at their Head, Feet, and Sides, so like the Sides and Ends of a Boat, that you could not discern the Face, or any Part of the Body *. Down, I often envied them this Exercise, which they seemed to perform with more Ease than I could only shake my Leg, or stir an Arm.

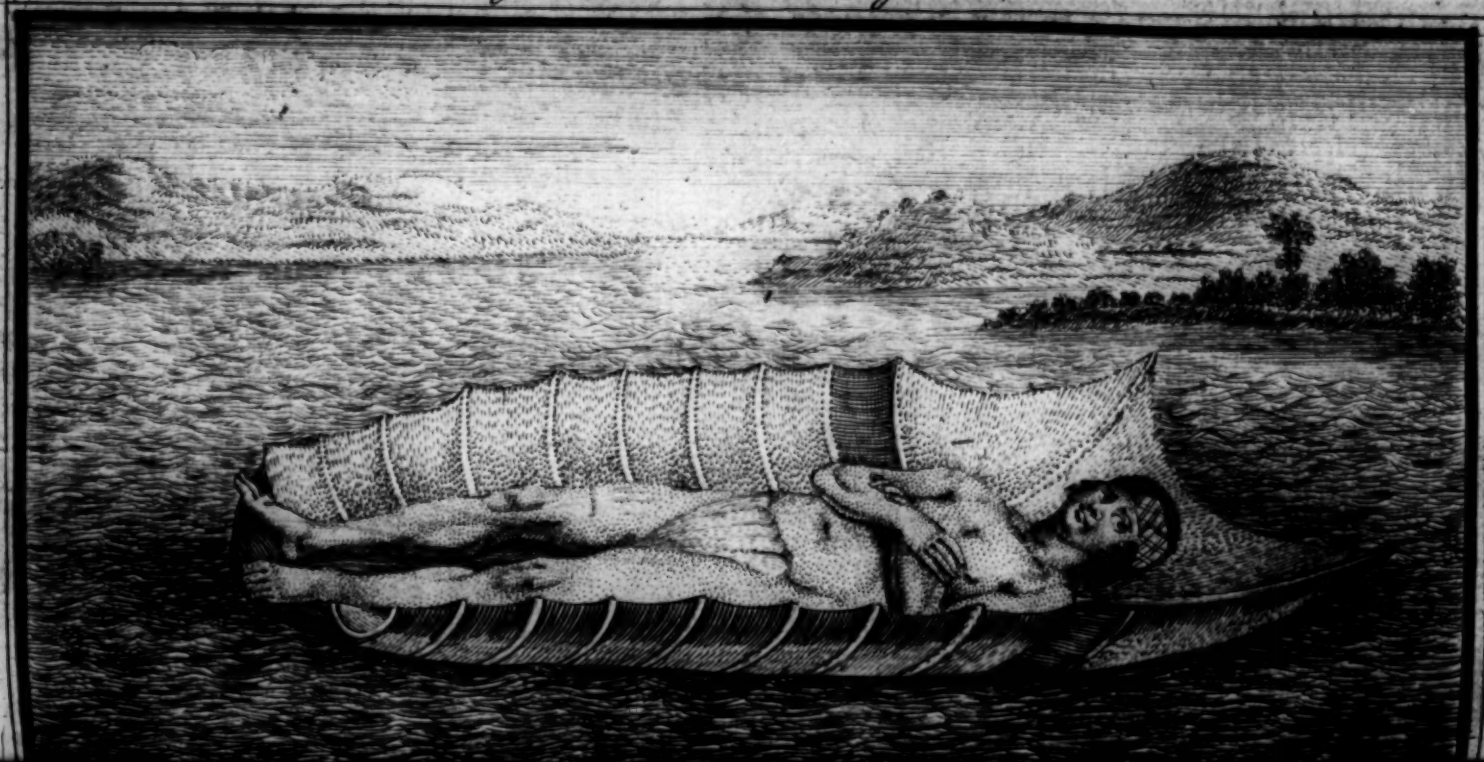
Tho' we had perpetually *Swangeans* about us, and the Voices, as I used to call them, I could never once prevail on my Wife to shew herself, or to claim any Acquantaince with her Country-folks. And what is very remarkable in my Children, is, that my three Daughters and *Tommy*, who had the full *Graundee*, had exactly their Mother's Sight, *Jemmy* and *David* had just my Sight, and *Pedro*'s Sight was between both, tho' he was never much affected with any Light: But I was obliged to make Spectacles for *Tommy* and all my Daughters when they came to go abroad.

I had

* Plate V.

Tab. V.

A Glumm Swiming



I had in this Time twice enlarged my Dwelling, which the Encrease of my Family had rendered necessary. The last Alteration I was enabled to do in a much better Manner, and with more Ease, than the first; for, by the Return of my Flota, I had gotten a large Collection of useful Tools: Several of Iron, where the Handles or Wood-work preponderated the Iron; but such as were all, or greatest Part, of that Metal had got either to the Rock, or were so fast fixed to the Head of the Ship, that it was difficult to remove them; so that my Wife could get comparatively few of this latter Sort; tho' some she did. It was well, truly, I had these Instruments, which greatly facilitated my Labours; for I was forced to work harder now than ever, in making Provision for us all; and my Sons *Pedro* and *Tommy* commonly assisted. I had also had another Importation of Goods thro' the Gulph, which still added to my Convenience. But my Boat made me shudder every Time I went into her. She had leaked again and again, and I had patch'd her till I could scarce see a Bit of the old Wood. She was of unspeakable Use to me, and yet I could not venture myself in her, but with the utmost Apprehension and Trembling. I had been intending a good while, now I had such Helps, to build a new one, but had been diverted by one Avocation or other.

About this Time, *Yourwarkee*, who was now upwards of thirty-two Years of Age, the fondest Mother living, and very proud of her Children, had formed a Project of taking a Flight to *Arndrumstake*, a Town in the Kingdom of *Doorpt Swangeanti*, as I called it, where her Father, if living, was a * *Colamb* under *Gearigsthi*

* Governor.

getti the Prince of that Country. She imparted her Desire to me, asking my Leave; and she told me, if I pleased, she would take *Patty* and *Tommy* along with her. I did not much dislike the Proposal, because of the great Inclination I had for a long Time, to a Knowledge of, and Familiarity with, her Countrymen and Relations; and now I had so many of her Children with me, I could not think she would ever be prevailed on, but by Force, to quit me and her Offspring, and be contented to lose six for the sake of having two with her; especially as she had shewed no more Love for them than the rest: So I made no Hesitation, but told her she should go.

I expected continually I should hear of her Departure; but she saying no more of it, I thought she had dropt her Design, and I did not chuse to mention it. But one Day, as we were at Dinner, looking mighty seriously, she said, My Dear, I have considered of the Journey you have consented I should take, but in order thereto it is necessary that I prepare several Things for the Children, especially those who have no *Graundee*, and I am resolved to finish them before I go, that we may appear with Decency, both here and at *Arndrumnstake*: For I am sure my Father, whose Temper I am perfectly acquainted with, will, upon Sight of me and my little ones, be so overjoyed, that he will forgive my Absence, and Marriage, provided he sees Reason to believe I have not match'd unworthily, unbecoming my Birth; and after keeping me and the Children with him, it may be two or three Months, will accompany me home again himself with a great Retinue of Servants, and Relations; or, at least, if he is either dead or

unable

unable for Flight, my other Relations will come, or ſend a Convoy to take care of me and the Children: And, my Dear, as I ſhall give them all the Encomiums I can of you, and of my Situation with you, while I am among them; I would have them a little taken with the Elegance of our domeſtick Condition when they come hither, that they may think me happy in you and my Children: For I would not only put my Family into a Condition to appear before them, but to ſurprize the old Gentleman and his Company, who never in their Lives ſaw any Part of Mankind with another Covering than the *Graundee*. When ſhe had done, I expreſſed my Approbation of her whole Syſtem, as altogether prudent; and ſhe proceeded immediately to put it in Execution. To work ſhe went, opened every Cheſt, and examined their Contents. But while ſhe was upon the hunt, and ſelecting ſuch Things as ſhe thought fit for her Purpoſe, ſhe recollected ſeveral Articles ſhe had obſerved in the Ship, which ſhe judged far more for her Turn, than any ſhe had at home. Hereupon ſhe prayed me to let her take another Trip to the Veſſel, and to carry *Tommy* with her.

After ſo many Trials, and ſuch happy Experience of her wiſe and fortunate Conduct, I conſented to her Flight, and away went ſhe and her Son. Upon their Return, which was in a few Days, ſhe told me what they had been doing, and ſaid, as ſhe ſo often heard me complain of the Age of my Boat, and Fear to ſail in her, ſhe had fitted me out a little Ship, and hoped it would in due Time arrive ſafely. As ſhe paſſed quickly on to other Things, I never once thought of aſking her what ſhe meant by the little Ship ſhe ſpoke of;

of; but muſt own, that like a fooliſhly fond Parent, I was more intent on her telling me how *Tommy* had found a Hoard of Playthings, which he had packed up for his own Uſe.

As to this laſt Particular, I learn'd, by the Sequel of the Story, when the Spark, proud of his Acquiſition, came to me, That he had been peeping about in the Cabin, whilſt his Mother was packing the Cheſts, and ſeeing a ſmall braſs Knob in the Wainſcot, took it for a Plaything, and pulling to get it out, opened a little Door of a Cupboard, where he had found ſome very pretty Toys, that he poſitively claim'd for himſelf: Among which were, a ſmall plain Gold Ring, and a very fine one ſet with Diamonds, which he ſhewed me upon two of his Fingers. I wondered how the Child, who had never before ſeen ſuch Things, or the Uſe of them, ſhould happen to apply theſe ſo properly; but he told me in playing with this, meaning the Diamond Ring, about his Fingers, it ſlipped over his middle Finger Joint, and he could not get it off again, ſo he put the other upon another Finger to keep it Company.

We watched daily, as uſual on ſuch Occaſions, for the Arrival of our Fleet. It was ſurprizing, that none of the Cheſts which *Youwarkee* ſhot down the Gulph were ever half ſo long in their Paſſage as I was myſelf, but ſome came in a Week, ſome in a few Days more, and even ſome in leſs: Which I attributed to their following directly the Courſe of the Water, ſhooting from Shelf to Shelf as the Tide ſat; and I believe my keeping the Boat I ſailed in ſo ſtrictly and conſtantly in the Middle of the Stream, was the Reaſon of my being detained there ſo long.

In

In less than a Fortnight, every Thing came safe but one Chest, which, as we never heard of it, I suppose was either sunk or bulged.

Being one Day upon Shore, watching to see if any Thing more was come thro' the Cavern, I spied at a Distance somewhat looking very black and very long, and by the Colour and Shape thereof I took it for a young Whale. Having observed it some Time making very little Way, I took my old Boat and followed it; but was afraid to go near it, lest a Stroke with its Tail (which I then fancied I saw move) might endanger my Boat and myself too; but creeping nearer and nearer, and seeing it did not stir, I believed it to be dead; whereupon taking Courage, I drew so close, that at length I plainly perceived it was the Ship's second Boat turned upside down. It is not easy to express the Joy I felt on this Discovery. It was the very Thing I was now, as I have said, in the greatest Want of. I presently laid hold of it, and brought it ashore; and it was no small Pleasure to find, on examining, that tho' it had lain so long dry, it was yet quite sound, and all its Chinks filled up in its Passage: And it prov'd to me, afterwards, the most beneficial Thing I could have had from the Ship.

I got all my Goods home from the Lake to my Grotto, by means of the Cart, as usual. My Wife and Daughters waited with Impatience for me to unpack, that they might take Possession of such Things as would be needful for rigging out the Family, against the supposed Reception of the old *Glumm*, and had set all the Chests in the Order they desired they might be opened in. But *Tommy* running to me, with a pray Daddy open my Chest first, pray give me my Play-things first, it was (to satisfy him) concluded

cluded in Favour of his Demand. So, he pointing to the Chest which he regarded as his Property, I opened it, whilst his Eyes were ready to pierce thro' it, 'till I came to his Treasure. There, there they are, Daddy, says he, as soon as I had uncovered 'em. And indeed, when I saw them, I could not but much commend the Child for his Fancy; for the first Things that appeared were a silver Punch or Wine-Can and a Ladle, then a gold Watch, a Pair of Scissars, a small silver Chafing-dish and Lamp, a large Case of mathematical Instruments, a Flagellet, a Terrella, or globular Loadstone, a small Globe, a Dozen of large silver Spoons, and a small Case of Knives and Forks and Spoons: In short, there was, I believe, the greatest Part of the *Portuguese* Captain's valuable Effects.

These *Tommy* claiming as his own proper Chattels, I could not help interposing somewhat of my Authority in the Affair. Hold, hold Son, says I, these Things are all mine: But as I have several of you, who will all be equally pleased with them; though, as the first Finder, you may be intitled to the best Share, you are not to grasp the Whole; you must all have something like an Equality: And as to some Things which may be equally useful to us all, they must be set up to be used upon Occasion, and are to be considered as mine and your Mother's Property. I thereupon gave each of them a large silver Spoon and with a Fork I scratched the Initials of their Names respectively on 'em, and divided several of the Trifles amongst them equally. And now *Tommy*, says I, you for your Pains, shall have this more than the rest, offering him the Flagellet. *Tommy* looked very gloomy; and though he durst not find Fault, his

Dissatisfaction

Dissatisfaction was very visible, by coolly taking it, tossing it down and walking gravely off. I thought, says I, *Tommy*, I had made a good Choice for you; but, as I find you despise it, here *Pedro*, do you take that pretty Thing, since your Brother slights it. *Tommy* replied, (speaking but half out, and a little surly, more than I ever observed before) let him take it if he will, I can get Bits of Sticks enough in the Wood.

My Method had always been to avoid either beating or scolding at my Children, for preferring their own Opinion to mine; but I ever let Things turn about so, that from their own Reason they should perceive they had erred in opposing my Sentiments; by which Means they grew so habituated to submit to my Advice and Direction, that, for the most part, my Will was no sooner known to them, than it became their own Choice: But then I never willed according to Fancy only, but with Judgment, to the best of my Skill.

Tommy therefore (as I said before) having shewn a Disapprobation of my Doings: to convince him of his Mistake, I took the Flagellet from *Pedro*, and now *Pedro*, says I, let me teach you how to manage this Piece of Wood, as *Tommy* calls it, and then let me see if in all the Grove he can cut such another. On this I clapt it to my Mouth, and immediately played several Country Dances and Hornpipes on it: For tho' my Mother had scarce taught me to read, I had learnt Musick and Dancing, being, as she called them, Gentleman-like Accomplishments. My Wife and Children, especially *Tommy*, all stared as if they were wild, first on me, then on one another, whilst I played a Country-Dance; but I had no sooner struck up an Hornpipe, than their Feet,

Arms,

Arms, and Heads, had so many Twitchings and convulsive Motions, that not one quiet Limb was to be seen amongst them; till having exercised their Members as long as I saw fit, I almost laid them all to sleep with *Chevy Chase*, and so gave over.

They no sooner found themselves free from this Enchantment, than the Children all hustled round me in a Cluster, all speaking together, and reaching out their little Hands to the Instrument. I gave it *Pedro*. There, says I to him, take this slighted Favour as no such contemptible Present.

Poor *Tommy*, who had all this while looked very simple, burst into a Flood of Tears, at my last Words, as if his Heart would have broke; and runnig to me, fell on his Knees, and begged my Pardon, hoping I would forgive him. I took him up, and kissing him, told him he had very little offended me; for, as he knew, I had more Children to give any Thing to which either of the rest despised, it was equal to me who had it, so it was thankfully received. I found that did not satisfy: Still in Tears, he said, might he not have the Stick again, as I gave it to him first? *Tommy*, says I, you know I gave it to you first; but you disapproving my Kindness, I have now given it *Pedro*, who, should I against his Will take it from him, would have that Reason to complain which you have not, who parted with it by your own Consent; and therefore, *Tommy*, as I am determined to acquaint you, as near as I can, with the strict Rules of Justice, there must no more be said to me of this Matter. Such as this was my constant Practice amongst them; and they having always found me inflexible

flexible from this Rule, we seldom had any long Debates.

Tho' I say the Affair ended so, with regard to what I had to do in it, yet it ended not so with *Tommy*; for tho' he knew he had no Hopes of moving me, he set all his Engines at work to recover his Stick (as he called it) by his Mother's and Sister's Interest. These sollicited *Pedro* very strongly to gratify him. At length *Pedro* (he being a Boy of a most humane Disposition) granted their Desire, if I would give leave; and I having signified, that, the Cause being now out of my Hands, he might do as he pleased, he generously yielded it. And indeed he could not have bestowed it more properly; for *Tommy* had the best Ear for Musick I ever knew; and in less than a Twelvemonth could far outdo me, his Instructor, in Softness and Easiness of Finger; and was also Master of every Tune I knew, which were neither inconsiderable in Number, nor of the lowest Rate.

Youwarkee, with her Daughters, sat close to Work, and had but just compleated her whole Design for the Family Cloathing when she told me she found herself with Child again. As that Circumstance ill-suited a Journey, she deferred her Flight for about fifteen Months; in which Time she was brought to Bed, and weaned the Infant, which was a Boy, whom I named *Richard*, after my good Master at the Academy. The little Knave thrived amain, and was left to my further Nursing during its Mammy's Absence: Who, still firm to her Resolution, after she had equipped herself and Companions with whatever was necessary to their travelling, and locked up all the Apparel she had made till her Return, because she would have it appear new

when her Father came, set out with her Son *Tommy* and my two Daughters *Patty* and *Hollicarnie*; the last of which, by this Time, being big enough also to be trusted with her Mother.

CHAP. XXV.

Youwarkee's Account of the Stages to Arndrumnstake; *the Author uneasy at her Flight; his Imployment in her Absence, and Preparations for receiving her Father; how he spent the Evenings with the Children.*

MY Wife was now upon her Journey to her Father's; but where that was, or how far off, it was impossible for me to conceive by her Description of the Way: For she distinguished it not by Miles or Leagues, but by *Swangeans*, and Names of Rocks, Seas, and Mountains, which I could neither comprehend the Distance of from each other, nor from *Graundevolet* where I was. I understood by her indeed there was a great Sea to be passed, which would take her up almost a Day and Night, having the Children with her, before she reached the next *Arkoe*; though she could do it herself, she said, and strain hard, in a Summer's Night: But if the Children should flag by the Way; as there was no Resting-place between us and *Battringdrigg*, the next *Arkoe*, it might be dangerous to them; so she would take the above Time for their Sakes. After this, I found by what she said, there was a narrow Sea to pass, and a prodigious Mountain, before she reached her own Country; and that her Father's was but a little beyond that Mountain. This was all

I could

I could know in general about it. At their Departure, she and the Children had taken each a small Provision for their Flight, which hung about their Necks in a sort of Purse.

I can't say, notwithstanding this Journey was taken with my Concurrence and Consent, that I was perfectly easy when they were gone; for my Affection for them all would work up imaginary Fears, too potent for my Reason to dispel, and which at first sat with no easy Pressure upon my Mind. This, my pretty Babies at home perceiving, used all the little winning Arts they could to divert and keep up my Spirits; and from Day to Day, by taking them abroad with me, and playing with, and amusing them at home, I grew more and more persuaded that all would go right with the Absent, and that in due Time I should see them return again.

But as the Winter set in, I went little abroad, and then we employed ourselves within Doors, in preparing several Things, which might not only be useful and ornamental, if the old *Glumm* should come to see us, but might also divert us, and make the Time pass less tediously. The first Thing I went upon was a Table; which, as my Family consisted of so many, I intended to make big enough for us all. With that View I broke up a Couple of Chests, and taking the two Sides of one of them, I nailed them Edge to Edge by strong thick Pieces underneath, at each End, and in the Middle; then I took two Chest-lids with their Hinges, nailing one to each Side of my middle Piece, which made two good Flaps; after this, with my Tools, of which I had now a Chest full, I chopped out of new Stuff and planed four strong Legs quite square, and nailed them strongly to each Corner

of my middle Board; I then nailed Pieces from one Leg to the other, and nailed the Bed likewise to them; then I fastened a Border quite round, within six Inches from the Bottom, from Foot to Foot, which held all fast together. When all this was done, still my Table was imperfect, I could not put up the Flaps, having no proper Support. To remedy this, I sawed out a broad Slip from a Chest-side, and boring a large Hole through the Center, I spiked it up to the under-side of the Table's Bed, with a Spindle I contrived, just loose enough to play round the Head of the Spike, filing down that Part of the Spindle which passed through the Bed of the Table, and rivetting it close; so that when my Flaps were set up, I pulled the Slip cross-ways of the Table, and when the Flaps were down, the Slip turned under the Top of the Table, lengthways; next under each Flap, I nailed a small Slip the lengthways of the Flaps, to raise them on a Level (when up) with the Top of the Table. When I had thus compleated the several Parts of this needful Utensil, I spent some Time and Pains, by scraping and rubbing, to render it all as elegant as could be; and the Success so well answered my Wish, that I was not a little proud of the Performance: And what rendered my Work thereon a still more agreeable Task, was my pretty Infants Company, who stood by, expressing their Wonder and Approbation at every Stroke.

Now I had gotten a Table, I wanted Chairs to it; for as yet we had only sat round the Room upon Chests, which formed a Bench of the whole Circumference, they stood so thick. There was no moving of them without a monstrous Trouble, every Time I might have Occa-

sion

ſion to ſet out my Table; beſides, if I could have dragged them backwards and forwards, they were too low to be commodious for Seats; ſo I reſolved to make ſome Chairs and Stools alſo, that might be manageable. I will not trouble you with the Steps I took in the Formation of theſe; only, in general, you muſt know, that ſome more Cheſts I broke up to that Purpoſe ſerved me for Timber, out of which I framed ſix ſizeable handſome Chairs, and a competent Number of Stools.

But now that I was turned Joiner I had another Convenience to provide for. I had nothing wherein to incloſe Things, and preſerve 'em from Duſt, except the Cheſts; and they were quite unfit for holding Liquors, Victuals, and ſuch like Matters, in open Shells, as moſt of my Veſſels were. Wherefore, having ſeveral Boards now remaining, of the Boxes I had broken up for Chairs and Stools, I bethought me of ſupplying this great Deficiency; ſo, of theſe ſpare Boards, in a Workmanlike Way (for by this Time I was become a tolerable Mechanic) I compoſed a very tight Cloſet, holding half a Dozen broad Shelves, ſhut up by a good Pair of Doors, with a Lock and Key to faſten them.

Theſe Jobs took me up almoſt three Months, and I thought I had not employed them idly, but for the Credit and Service of my Family. I was now again at Leiſure for farther Projects. I was uncertain as to my Wife's Return, how ſoon ſhe might be with me, or how much longer ſhe might ſtay; but I was ſure I could do nothing in the mean while more grateful, than encreaſing, by all Means in my Power, the Accomodations of my Houſe, for the more polite as well as convenient Reception of her Father,

or any else who might accompany her home in the Way of a Retinue, as she talked of, I saw plainly I had not Room for lodging of them, and that was a Circumstance of main Importance to be provided for. Hereupon I thought of adding a long Apartment to one of my outer Rooms, to range against the Side of the Rock; but reflecting, that such a Thing would be quite useless, unless I could finish it in Time, so as to be compleat when my Guests came, and not knowing how soon that might be, I resolved to quit this Design; and I fell upon another, which might do as well, and required much less Labour, and fewer Days, to perfect.

I remembered that amongst those Things my Wife had packed up on board the Ship, and which came home through the Gulph, there were two of the largest Sails, and a Couple of smaller Size. These I carried to the Wood, and tried them in several Places, to see where they might be disposed to most Advantage, in the Nature of a Tent; and having found a convenient Spot to my Purpose, I cut divers Poles for Supporters, and making Straining-lines of my Mat-weed, I pitched a noble one, sufficient to cover or entertain a numerous Company, and so tight every where as to keep out the Weather. The Front of this new Apartment I hung with blue cloth; which had a very genteel Effect: I had almost forgotten to tell you, that I contrived so, (by hanging one of the smaller Sails across, just in the Middle, which I could let down, or raise up at Pleasure) as to divide the Tent occasionally, into two distinct Rooms.

When I had proceeded thus far, there were still wanting Seats for this additional Building, as I may call it; and though I could spare some

Chests

Chests to sit on, I found they would not half do. For a Supplement then I took my Ax, and felled a Couple of great Trees, one from each Side of the Tent, sawed off the Tops, and cut each of the Trunks in two, about the Middle; these huge Cylinders I rolled into the Tent with a good deal of Toil and Difficulty; two of them I thrust into the inner Division, and left two in the outer; I placed them as Benches on both Sides; then with infinite Pains I shaved the upper Face of each smooth and flat, and pared off all the little Knots and Roughnesses of the Front, so that they were fitted to sit on; and their own Weight fixed them in the Place where I intended them to be. At the upper End of the further Chamber I set three Chests lengthwise, for Seats, or any other Use I might see fit to put them to.

During these Operations we were all hard at it, and no Hand idle, but *Dicky* in Arms, and *Sally*, whom he kept in full Employ; but *Pedro*, being a sturdy Lad, could drive a Nail, and lift or carry the Things I wanted; and *Jemmy* and *David*, tho' so young, could pick up the Chips, hold a Nail, or the Lamp, or be some Way or other useful: For I always preached to them the Necessity of earning their Bread before they eat it, and not think to live on mine and their Brother's Labour.

The Nights being pretty long, after Work was over, and *Sarah* had fed her Brother, and laid him in his Hammock, we used to sit all down to enjoy ourselves at a good Meal; for we were never regular at that till Night; and then after Meal, my Wife being absent, one or other of the young ones would begin with something they had before heard me speak of, by

saying, *Daddy*, how did you use to do this or that in *England*; then all Ears were immediately open to catch my Answer, which certainly brought on something else, done either there or elsewhere; and by their little Questions and my Answers they would sometimes draw me into a Story of three Hours long, till perhaps two out of three of my Audience were falling asleep, and then we all went to Bed.

I verily believe my Children would, almost any of them, from the frequent Repetition of these Stories, have given a sufficient Account of *England*, to have gained a Belief from almost any *Englishman* of their being Natives there.

I frequently observed, that when we had begun upon *Cornwall*, and traversed the Mines, the Sea-Coast, or talked of the fine Gentlemen's Seats, and such Things, one would start up, and, if the Discourse flagged ever so little, would cry, ay but *Daddy*, what did you do when the Crocodile came after you out of the Water? and another, before that Subject was half ended, (and I was forced to enter on every one they started) would be impatient for the Story of the Lion; and I always took Notice, that the Part each had made the most Reflections on was always most acceptable to the same Person: But poor *Sally* would never let the Conversation drop without some Account of the *Muletto*, it was such a pretty gentle Creature she said.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVI.

The Author's Concern at Youwarkee's *Stay; Reflections on his Condition; hears a Voice call him;* Youwarkee's *Brother* Quangrollart *visits him with a Companion; he treats them at the Grotto; the Brother discovers himself by Accident;* Wilkins *produces his Children to him.*

MY Head, as well as my Hands, had now been employed for five Months, in adjusting all Things in the most suitable Manner for the Reception of *Youwarkee* and her Friend; but no Body coming, and light Days getting forward apace, I began to grow very uneasy, and had formed divers Imaginations of what might occasion her Stay. Thought I, I am afraid all the Pains I have been taking will be to no Purpose; for either her Father will not let her return, or she has of herself come to such a Resolution: For she knows I cannot follow her, and had rather perhaps live, and enjoy the three Children she has with her, amidst a Number of her Friends and Acquaintance, than spend the Remainder of her Days with me and all our Offspring in this Solitude.——But then I reflected, she chose it herself, ot at least declared herself perfectly satisfied, yea delighted therewith? and here are her Children with me, the major Part of them.——Yet, what can I think? since her Return is put off till the *Swangeans* are over at this *Arkoe*, she will never bring her Relations now, in this unseasonable Time for Flight: Therefore I must think, if she intended to return at all, it would have been before now; and as the Case is not so, my Fear of losing her intirely prevails great-

ly. O! ſays I, that we had but a Poſt here, as we have in *England*; there we can communicate our Thoughts at a Diſtance to each other, without any Trouble, and for little Charge! What a Country is this to live in, and what an improper Creature am I to live in it! Had I but the *Graundee*, I would have found her out by this Time, be ſhe where ſhe would; but, whilſt every one about me can paſs, repaſs, and act as they pleaſe, I am fixed here like one of my Trees, bound to the Spot, or upon Removal to die in the Attempt. Alas! why did I beget Children here, but to make them as wretched and inconſolable as myſelf? Some of them are ſo formed, indeed, as to ſhift for themſelves; but they owe it to their Mother, not to me. What! am I a Father of Children who will be bound one Day to curſe me? Severe Reflection! Yet I never thought of this till now. But, am I the only Father in ſuch a Caſe? No ſurely: For am not I as much bound to curſe my Father, as my Children are to curſe me? He might have left me happy if he would, I would them if I could. Again, are there not others, who, by improper Junction with Perſons diſeaſed in Body, or vicious in Mind, have intailed greater Miſery upon their Poſterity, than I have on mine? My Children are all healthy, ſtrong, and ſound, both in Body and Mind; and is not that the greateſt Bleſſing that can be beſtowed on our Beings? But they are impriſoned in this *Arkce*. What then? With Induſtry here is no Want; and as they increaſe, they may ſettle in Communities, and be helpful to each other. I have lived well here, nigh ſixteen Years, and it was God's Pleaſure I ſhould be here; and can I think I was placed here, with an Injunction

contrary

contrary to the great Command, *Increase and Multiply?* If that were so, can it be possible I should have received the only Means of propagating, as it were from Heaven itself? No, it was certainly as much my Maker's Will, that I should have Posterity here, as that I myself should at first be brought hither. This is a large and plentiful Spot, and capable of great Improvement, when there shall be Hands sufficient. How many petty States are less than these my Dominions? I have here a Compass of near twenty Miles round, and how many Thousands grow voluntarily grey in a far less Circuit?

I had hardly finished my Reflections (for I was sitting by myself in my Tent upon one of the Trees I had turned into Benches) when I heard a musical Voice call *Peter, Peter*. I started; what's this, says I; it is not *Yeuwarkee*'s Voice; what can this mean? Listening, I heard it again; but at so great a Distance, I could but just perceive the Sound. Be it where it will, says I, I'll face it. Thus speaking, I went out of the Tent, and hearkened very attentively, but could hear nothing. I then run for my Gun, and walked through the Wood as fast as I could to the Plain; but still I neither saw nor heard any thing. I was then in Hopes of seeing somebody on the Lake, but no one appeared: For I was fully determined to make myself known to whomsoever I should meet, and, if possible, to gain some Intelligence of my Wife. But after so much fruitless Pains, my Hopes being at an End, I was returning, when I heard *Peter, Peter*, again, at a great Distance; the Sound coming from a different Quarter than at first. Upon this I stopped, and heard it repeated, and it was as if the Speaker approached nearer and nearer. Hereupon I

stepped

ſtepped out of the Wood, (for I had juſt re-entered it upon my Return home) when I ſaw two Perſons upon the *Swangean*, juſt over my Head. I cried out, Who's that; and they immediatly called again, *Peter*, *Peter*. *Ors clam gee*, ſays I, that is, here am I. On this they directly took a ſmall Sweep round, (for they had overſhot me before they heard me) and alighted juſt by me: When I perceived them to be my Wife's Countrymen, being dreſſed like her, with only broader Chaplets about their Heads, as ſhe had told me the *Glumms* all wore. After a ſhort Obeiſance, they aſked me if I was the *Glumm Peter*, * *Barkett* to *Youwarkee*? I anſwered, I was. They then told me they came with a Meſſage from *Pendlehamby*, † *Colamb* of *Arndrumnſtake*, my ‡ *Goppo*, and from *Youwarkee* his Daughter. I was vaſtly rejoiced to ſee them, and to hear only the Name of my Wife. But though I longed to know their Meſſage, I trembled to think of their mentioning it, as one of them was juſt going to do, for fear of hearing ſome Things very diſpleaſing: So I begged them to go through the Wood with me to the Grotto, where we ſhould have more Leiſure and Convenience for Talk, and where, at the ſame Time, they might take ſome Refreſhment. But though I had thus put off their Meſſage, I could not forbear enquiring by the Way after the Health of my *Goppo*, and my Wife and Children, how they got to *Arndrumnſtake*, and how they found their Relations and Friends. They told me all were well; and that *Youwarkee*, as ſhe did on me, deſired I would think on her with true Affection. I found this was the Phraſe of the Country.

* Huſband. † Governor. ‡ Father-in-Law.

Country. As for the reſt, I hoped it would turn out well at laſt, tho' I dreaded to hear it.

Being arrived at the the Grotto, I deſired my Gueſts to ſit down, and take ſuch Refreſhment as I could prepare them. When they were ſeated, I went to work in order to provide them a Repaſt. Seeing my Fire piled up very high, and burning fierce, and the Children about it, they wondered where they were got, and who they had come to, and turned their Faces from it; but I ſetting ſome Chairs, ſo that the Light might not ſtrike on their Eyes, they liked the Warmth well enough: Tho', I remarked, the Light did not affect them ſo much as it had done *Youwarket*.

Whilſt I was cooking, the poor Children got all up in a Corner, and ſtared at the Strangers, not being able to conceive where they came from; and by Degrees crept all backwards into the Bedchamber, and hid themſelves; for they had never before ſeen any body but my own Family.

I obſerved that one of my Gueſts paid more than ordinary Reſpect to the other; and tho' their *Graundees* made no Diſtinction between them, yet there was ſomething, I thought, much more noble in the Addreſs and Behaviour of the latter; and taking Notice that he was alſo the chief Spokeſman, I judged it proper to pay my Reſpects to him in a ſomewhat more diſtinguiſhing Manner; though, ſo as not to offend the other if I ſhould happen to be miſtaken.

I firſt preſented a Can of my *Madeira*, and took care, as if by Accident, to give it to Mr. Uppermoſt, as I thought him; who drank half of it, and would have given the Remainder to his Companion; but I begged him to drink it all up, and his Friend ſhould be ſerved with ſome

preſently:

presently: He did so, and thanked me by lifting his Hand to his Chin. I then gave the other a Can of the same Liquor, which he drank, and returned Thanks as his Companion had before. I then took a Can myself, and telling them I begged leave to use the Ceremony of my own Country to them, I drank, wishing their own Health, and that of all Relations at *Arndrumnstake*. He that I took for the Superior, fell a laughing heartily; ha, ha, ha, says he, this is the very Way my Sister does every Day at *Arndrumnstake*. Your Sister Sir, says I, pray has she ever been in *Europe* or in *England*. Well, says he, I have plainly discovered myself, which I did not intend to do yet; but truly Brother *Peter*, I mean none other than your own Wife, *Youwarkee*.

The Moment I knew who he was, I rose up and taking him by the Right-hand, lifted it to my Lips, and kissed it. He likewise immediately stood up, and we embraced each other with great Tenderness. I then begged him, as I had so worthy and near a Relation of my Wife's with me, that he would not delay the Happiness I hoped for, in a Narrative from his Mouth, how it fared with my Father, Wife, and Children, and all their Kinsfolks and Friends, whom I had so often heard mentioned by my dearest *Youwarkee*, and so earnestly desired to see.

My Brother *Quangrallart* (for that he told me was his Name) was preparing to gratify my Impatience; but seeing I had set the Entertainment on the Table, which consisted chiefly of Bread, several Sorts of Pickles and Preserves, with some cold salted Fish; he said, that eating would but interrupt the Thread of his Discourse,

and

and therefore, with my Leave he would defer the relating of what I desired for a little while; which we all thinking most proper, I desired him and his Friend (who might be another Brother for ought I knew) to refresh themselves with the poor Modicum I was able to provide them.

Whilst my Brother *Quangrollart* was looking upon, and handling his Plate, being what he had never before seen, his Friend had got the Handle of one of the Knives in his Mouth, biting it with all his Force; but finding he could make nothing of that End, he tried the other, and got champing the Blade. Perceiving what he was at, though I could not help laughing, I rose, and begging Pardon, took the Knife from him; telling him, I believed he was not acquainted with the Use of that Instrument, which was one of my Country Implements; and that the Design of it, which was called a Knife, and of that other, pointing to it, called a Fork, was the one to reduce the Food into Pieces proper for chewing, and the other to convey it to the Mouth without daubing the Fingers, which must happen in handling the Food itself. And I then shewed him what Use I put them to, by helping each of them therewith to somewhat, and by cutting a Piece for myself, and putting it to my Mouth with the Fork.

They both smiled, and looked very well pleased; and then I told them that the Plate was the only Thing that need be daubed, and when that was taken away, the Table remained clean. So, after I had helped each of them for the first Time, I desired them to help themselves where they liked best: And, to say the Truth, they did so, more dextrously than I could have expected.

During

During our Repaſt, we had frequent Sketches of the Obſervations they made in their Flight, and of the Places where they had reſted; and I could plainly ſee, that neither of them had ever been at this *Arkoe* before, by hinting, that if they had not taken ſuch a Courſe, they had miſſed me.

I took particular Notice which Part of my Entertainment they eat moſt of, that I might bring a freſh Supply of that when wanted; and I found, that though they eat heartily of my Bread and Preſerves, and taſted almoſt of every Thing elſe, they never once touched the Fiſh; which put me upon deſiring I might help them to ſome. At this they looked upon each other, which I readily knew the Meaning of, and excuſed themſelves, expreſſing great Satisfaction in what they had already gotten. I took however a Piece of Fiſh on my own Plate, and eating very heartily thereof, my Brother deſired me to give him a Bit of it; I did ſo, taking care to cut it as free from Bones as I could, and for greater Security cautioning him, in caſe there ſhould be any, to pick them out, and not ſwallow them. He had no ſooner put a Piece in his Mouth, but, *Roſig*, ſays he to his Friend, this is *Padſi*. I thought inded I had puzzled my Brother when I gave him the Fiſh, but by what he ſaid of it he puzzled me; for I knew not what he meant by *Padſi*, my Wife having told me they had no Fiſh: or, elſe, I ſhould have taken that Word for their Name of it. However, I cut *Roſig* a Slice: And he agreeing it was *Padſi*, they both eat heartily of it.

While we were at Dinner, my Brother told me he thought he ſaw ſome of my Children juſt now; for his Siſter had informed him ſhe

had

had five more at home; and he asked me why they did not appear, and eat with us. I excused their Coming, as fearing they would only be troublesome; and said, when we had done they should have some Victuals. But he would not be put off, and entreated me to admit them. So I called them by their Names, and they came, all but *Dicky*,, who was asleep in his Hammock. I told them, that * *Reglumm*, pointing to *Quangrollart*, was their Uncle, their Mamma's Brother, and ordered them to pay their Obeisance to him, which they severally did. I then made them salute *Rosig*. This last would have had them sit down at Table; but I positively forbad that; and giving each of them a little of what we had before us, they carried it to the Chests and eat it there.

When we had done, the Children helped me to clear the Table, and were retiring out of the Room; but then I recalled them and desired their Uncle to excuse their Stay: For as he had promised me News of their Mammy and her Family, it would be the Height of Pleasure to them to hear him. He seemed very much pleased with this Motion, desiring by all Means they might be present while he told his Story. Whereupon I ordered them to the Chests again, while *Quangrollart* delivered his Narrative.

* Gentleman.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVII.

Quangrollart's *Account of* Youwarkee's *Journey, and Reception at her Father's.*

HAVING set on the Table some Brandy and *Madeira*, and each of us taken one Glass of both, I shewed by the Attentiveness of my Aspect and Posture, how desirous I was he should proceed to what he had promised. Observing this, he went on in the following Manner. Brother *Peter*, says he, my Sister *Youwarkee*, as I don't doubt you will be glad to hear of her first, arrived very safe at *Arndrumstake*, the third Day after she left you, and after a very severe Flight to the dear little * *Hallycarnie*, who was a full Day and a Night on her *Graundee*; and at last would not have been able to have reached *Battingdrigg* but for my Sister's Assistance, who, taking her sometimes on her Back for a short Flight, by those little Refreshments enabled her to perform it; but from *Battindrigg*, after some Hours Rest, they came with Pleasure to the *White Mountains*, from whence, after a small Stay, they arrived at *Arndrumstake*.

They alighted at our † *Covett*, but were opposed at their Entrance by the Guards, to whom they did not chuse to discover themselves, till Notice was given to my Father; who, upon hearing that some Strangers desired Admittance to him, sent me to introduce them, if they were proper for his Presence, or else give Orders for such other Reception as was suitable to them.

When

* One of *Wilkins*'s Daughters. † Capital Seat.

When I came to the Guard, I found, three *Gawreys* and a * *Glumm Boſs*, whoſe Appearance and Behaviour, I muſt own, prejudiced me very much in their Favour. I then aſked from whence they came, and their Buſineſs with the *Colamb*? *Youwarkee* told me they came not about Buſineſs of publick Concern, relating to the *Colamb*'s Office, but out of a dutiful Regard, as Relations to kiſs his Knees. My Father, ſaid I, ſhall know it immediately; but firſt, pray inform me of your Name? Your Father, replied *Youwarkee*, are you my Brother *Quangrollart*? My Name is ſo, ſays I, but I have only one Siſter, now with my Father, and how I can be your Brother, I am not able to gueſs. Have you never had another Siſter, ſays ſhe? Yes, ſays I, but ſhe is long ſince dead; her Name was *Youwarkee*. At my mentioning her Name ſhe fell upon my Neck in Tears, crying my dear Brother, I am that dead Siſter *Youwarkee*, and theſe with me are ſome of my Children, for I have five more; but pray how does my Father and Siſter? I ſtarted back at this Declaration, to view her and the Children, fearing it was ſome groſs Impoſition; not in the leaſt knowing or remembering any thing of her Face, after ſo long an Abſence; but I deſired them to walk in, 'till I told my Father.

The Guard, obſerving the ſeveral Paſſages between us, were amazed to think who it could be had ſo familiarily embraced me; eſpecially as they plainly ſaw I only played a paſſive Part in it.

When I went in, I did not think proper directly to inform my Father what had happened; but calling my Siſter *Hallycarnie*, I let her into the

* A Youth.

the Circumſtances of this odd Affair, and deſired her Advice what to do: For, ſays I, ſurely this muſt be ſome Impoſtor; and as my Father has ſcarce ſubdued his Sorrow for my Siſter's Loſs, if this *Gawrey* ſhould prove a Deceiver, it will only revive his Affliction, and may prove, at this Time, extreamly dangerous to him: Therefore let's conſider, what had beſt be done in the Matter.

Hallycarnie, who had attentively weighed all I ſaid, ſeemed to think it was ſome Cheat, as well as I did; for we could neither of us conceive, that any thing but Death, or being *ſlit*, could have kept *Youwarkee* ſo long from the Knowledge of her Relations; and, that neither of them could be the Caſe, was plain, if the Perſon attending was *Youwarkee*. Beſides, Brother, ſays *Hallycarnie*, ſhe cannot ſurely be ſo much altered in fifteen Years, but you muſt have known her: And yet, now I think, it is poſſible, you being ſo much younger, may have forgot her; but whilſt we have been talking of her, I have ſo well recollected her, that I think I could hardly be impoſed upon by any Deceiver.

I then deſired her to go with me to the Strangers, and ſee if ſhe could make any Diſcovery. She did ſo, and had no ſooner enter'd the * *Abb*, but *Youwarkee* called out, my dear Siſter *Hallycarnie*; and ſhe as readily recollecting *Youwarkee*, they in Tranſport embraced each other; and then your Wife preſenting to us her three Children, it proved the tendereſt Scene, except the following, I ever ſaw.

My Father having kept his Chamber ſome Time with a Fever, and though he was pretty well recovered, having not yet been out of it; we

* Room.

we consulted how we might introduce our Sister and her Children to him, with as little Surprize as might be, for Fear of a Relapse, by too great a Hurry of his Spirits. At length we concluded, I should go tell him, that some Strangers had arrived, desiring to see him; but, on Inquiry, finding their Business was too trifling to trouble him upon, I had dispatched them: I was then to say, how like one of them was to my Sister *Youwarkee*; and, whilst I was speaking, *Hallycarnie* was to enter, and keep up the Discourse, till we should find a proper Opportunity of Discovery. I went in therefore, as had been agreed; and, upon mentioning the Name of *Youwarkee*, my Father fetched a deep Sigh, and turned away from me in Tears. At that Instant *Hallycarnie* came in as by Accident; Sir, says she, what makes you so sad, are you worse to-day? O! says he, I have heard a Name that will never be out of my Heart, till I am in * *Hoximo*. What, I suppose my Sister? 'Tis true, replied he, the same. Says she, I fancied so; for I have just seen a Stranger as like her as two † *Dorrs* could be, and would have sworn it was she, if that had been possible. I thought my Brother had been so imprudent as to mention her to you; and I think he did not do well to rip up an old Sore he knew was almost healed, and make it break out afresh. Ah! no, Child, says my Father, that Sore never has, nor can be healed. O great Image! why can't I by some Means or other be ascertained what End she came to?

Sir, says my Sister, I think you are much to blame for these Exclamations, after so long Absence

* A Place where the Dead are buried.
† A Fruit like an Apple.

ſence; For, if ſhe be dead, what Uſe are they of? and if ſhe be not, all may be well, and you may ſtill ſee her again. O never, never, ſays my Father; but could I be ſure ſhe was alive, I would take a *Swangean*, and never cloſe my *Graundee*, till I found her, or dropt dead in the Search. And ſuppoſe you could meet with her, Sir, ſays I, the very Sight would overcome you, and be dangerous. No, believe me, Boy, ſays he, I ſhould then be fully eaſy and compoſed; and were ſhe to come in this Moment, I ſhould ſuffer no Surprize, but Pleaſure. No, Surprize, Sir, ſays I? Not if ſhe were alive and well, ſays he. Then Sir, ſays *Hallycarnie*, will you excuſe me if I introduce her? and went out directly without ſtaying for an Anſwer.

When ſhe was gone, *Quangrollart*, ſays my Father ſternly, what is the Meaning of your's and your Siſter's playing thus upon my Weakneſs? It is what I can upon no Account forgive. It looks as if you were weary of me, and wanted to break my Heart. To what Purpoſe is all this Prelude of yours, to introduce to me ſomebody, who, by her Likeneſs to my Daughter, may expoſe me to your Scoff and Raillery? This is a Diſobedience I never expected from either of you.

The great Image attend me! ſays I, Sir, you have much miſtaken me; but I will not leave you in Doubt, even till *Hallycarnie*'s Return; you ſhall ſee *Youwarkee* with her; for all our Diſcourſe, I'll aſſure you, has but been concerted to prepare you for her Reception, with three of her Children. And am I then (ſays he in a Tranſport) ſtill to be bleſſed? You are Sir, ſays I; aſſure yourſelf you are.

By this Time we heard them coming; but my poor Father had not Power to go to meet them;

them: And upon *Youwarkee's* nearer Approach, to fall at his Knees, his Limbs failing him, he sunk, and without speaking a Word, fell backwards on a * *Cught Drapper*, which stood behind him; and being quite motionless, we concluded him to be stone dead. On this, the Women became intirely helpless, screaming only, and wringing their Hands in extravagant Postures. But I, having a little more Presence of Mind, called for the † *Calentar*, who, by holding his Nose, pinching his Feet, and other Applications in a little Time brought him to his Senses again.

You may more easily conceive than I describe, both the Confusion we were all in, during my Father's Disorder, and the Gratulations upon his Recovery: So, as I can give you but a defective Account of these, I shall pass them by, and come to our more serious Discourse, after my Father and your Wife had, without speaking a Word, wept themselves quite dry on each others Necks.

My Father then looking upon the three Children, (who were also crying to see their Mammy cry) and who are these, says he? These Sir, says *Youwarkee*, are three (of eight) of your Grand-children. And where is your *Barkatt*, says he? At home with the rest Sir, replied she, who are some of them too small to come so far yet: But Sir, says she, pray excuse my answering you any more Questions, till you are a little recovered from the Commotion I perceive my Presence has brought upon your Spirits; and as Rest, the *Calentar* says, will be exceedingly proper, I will retire with my Sister till you are better

* A Bed or Couch covered with a Sort of Cotton.
† A sort of Doctor in all great Families.

ter able to bear Company. My Father was, with much Difficulty prevailed with to part with her out of his Sight; but the *Calentar* pressing it, we were all dismissed, and he lay down to Rest.

My Brother would have gone on, but I told him, as it grew near Time for Repose, and he and *Rosig* must needs be fatigued with so long a Flight, if they pleased (as I had already heard the most valuable Part of all he could say, in that my Father received my Wife and Children so kindly, and that he left them all well) we would defer his farther Relation till the next Day: Which they both agreeing to, I laid them in my own Bed, myself sleeping in a spare Hammock.

CHAP. XXVIII.

A Discourse on Light; Quangrollart *explains the Word* Crashee; *believes a Fowl is a Fruit*; *gives a further Account of* Youwarkee's *Reception by her Father, and by the King*; Tommy *and* Hallycarnie *provided for at Court*; Youwarkee *and her Father visit the* Colambs, *and are visited*; *her Return put off till next Winter, when her Father is to come with her.*

THE next Day I prepared again of the best of every thing for my new Guests. I killed three Fowls, and ordered *Pedro*, (who was as good a Cook almost as myself) to get them ready for boiling, whilst we took a Walk to the Lake. 'Tho' we went out in the clearest Part of the Morning, I heard no Complaint of the Light. I took the Liberty to ask my Brother, if the Light did not offend him; for I told him my Wife could not bear so much without Spectacles.

Spectacles. What is that Spectacle, says he? Something I made your Sister, says I, to prevent the Inconvenience of too much Light upon her Eyes. He said the Light was scarce at all troublesome to him, for he had been in much greater and was used to it; and that the *Glumms*, who travelled much abroad, could bear more Light than the *Gawrys*, who staid much at home; these stirring but little out, unless in large Companies, and that of one another, and very rarely admitted *Glumms* amongst them before Marriage. For his own Part, he said, he had an Office at * *Crash Doorpt*, which, though he executed chiefly by a Deputy, obliged him to reside there sometimes for a long Season together; and that being a more luminous Country than *Arndrumstake*, Light was become familiar to him; for it was very observable, that some who had been used to it young, though they might in Time overcome it, yet at first it was very uneasy.

I was upon the Tenter whilst he spoke, lest, before he had done, a Question, I had a thousand Times thought to have asked my Wife, should slip out of my Head, as it had so often done before; and was, what I had for Years desired to be resolved in, *viz.* What the Meaning of the Word *Slitt* was, when applied to a Man? So, on his pausing, I said, that his Mention of *Crash-doorpt* reminded me of inquiring what *Crashee* meant, when applied to a *Glumm*, or *Gawry*. It would be no hard Task, he said, to satisfy me in respect of that, as I already understood the Nature of the *Graundee*; whereupon he went on thus: "*Slitting* is the only Punishment we use "to incorrigible Criminals: Our Method is,

* The Country of the *Slitts*.

" Where any one has committed a very heinous " Offence, or, which is the same Thing, has " multiplied the Acts of Offence, he has a long " String tied round his Neck, in the Manner of " a Cravat; and then two *Glumms*, one at each " End, take it in their Hands, standing Side by " Side with him; two more stand before him, " and two behind him; all which in that Man- " ner take Flight, so that the String keeps the " Criminal in the Middle of them; thus they " conduct him to *Crash-Doorpt*, which lies farther " on the other Side of *Arndrumnstake*, than this " *Arkoe* does on this Side of it, and is just such an " *Arkoe* as ours, but much bigger within the " Rocks. When they come to the *Covett* they " alight, where my Deputy immediately orders " the Malefactor to be *slit*, so that he can never " more return to *Normnbasgrsutt*, or indeed by " any Means get out of that *Arkoe*, but must end " his Days there. The Method of *Slitting* is " thus, The Criminal is laid on his Back with " his *Graundee* open, and after a Recapitulation " of his Crimes and his Condemnation, the " Officer with a sharp Stone, *slits* the *Gume* * " between each of the † *Filas* of the *Graundee*, " so that he can never fly more." But what is still worse to new Comers, if they are not very young, is, the Light of the Place, which is so strong, that it is some Years before they can overcome it, if ever they do.

This Discourse gave me a great Pleasure; thereupon I repeated the Dialogue that had pass'd between me and *Youwarkee* about my being *slit*, and how we had held an Argument a long Time, without being able to come at one another's Meaning. But, pray Brother, says I, how comes that

* The Membrane. † Ribs.

that light Country to agree so well with you? Why, says he, the * *Colambat* of *Crash-Doarpt* is reckoned one of the most honourable Employments in the State, by reason of the Hazard of it, and the Person accepting it must be young; it was, by my Father's Interest at Court, given to me at nine Years of Age; my Friend *Rosig* has followed my Fortune in it ever since, being much about my Age, and has a Post under me there: In short, by being obliged to be so much there, and from so tender an Age too, I have pretty well enured myself to any Light.

By this Time we had got home again to Dinner, which *Pedro* had set out as elegantly as my Country could afford, consisting of Pickles and Preserves, as usual, a Dish of hard Eggs, and boiled Fowls with Spinage.

My Guests, as I expected, stared at the Fowls, but never offered to touch them, or seemed in the least inclined to do so. I was afraid they would be cold, and begged them to let me help them. I put a Wing on each of their Plates, and a Leg on my own; but perceiving they waited to see how I managed it, I stuck in my Fork, cut off a Slice, dipped it in the Salt, and put it in my Mouth. Just as I did they did, and appeared very well pleased with the Taste. I never in my Lite, says *Rosig*, saw a † *Crullmott* of this Shape before; and laid hold of a Leg, (taking it for a Stick I had thrust in, as he told me afterwards) intending to pull it out; but finding it grew there, Mr. *Peter*, says he, you have the oddest shaped *Crullmotts* that ever I saw, pray, what Part of the Woods do they grow in? Grow in, says I? Ay, says he, I mean whether your *Crullmott*-Trees are like ours or not? Why, says

* Government. † A Fruit like a Melon.

I, these Fowls are about my Yard and the Wood too. What, says he, is it a running Plant like a * *Bott?* No, no, says I, a Bird that I keep tame about my House; and these, (shewing him the Eggs) are the Eggs of these Birds, and the Birds grow from them. Prithee, says *Quangrollart*, never let's inquire what they are till we have dined; for my Brother *Peter* will give us nothing we need be afraid of.

It growing into the Night, by that Time we rose from Table, I set a Bowl of Punch before them, made with my Treacle and four Rams-horn Juice, which they pulled off plentifully. After some Bumpers had gone round, I desired my Brother to proceed where he left off, in the Account of my Wife's Reception with her Father.

When my Father, says he, had recovered himself by some Hours Repose, the first Thing he did was to order my Sister *Youwarkee* to be called; who coming into his Presence, he took her from her Knees, kissed her, and ordered all to depart but myself and *Hallycarnie*. Then bidding us sit down, says he to your Wife, Daughter, your Appearance, whom I have so long lamented as dead, has given me the trueft Cordial I could have received, and I hope will add both to my Health and Years. I have heard, you suspect my Anger for some Part of your past Conduct (for she had hinted so to her Sister and me) which you justly enough imagine may be censured; but, my dear Life, I am this Day (what I did not expect any more to be) a Father of a new-born Child; and not of one only, but of many; and this Day, I say, Daughter, shall not be spent in Sorrow and Excuses, or any Thing to interrupt our mutual Felicity; neither will I ever hereafter permit

* Gourd.

permit you to beg my Forgiveneſs, or attempt to palliate any of your Proceedings; for know, Child, that a Benevolence freely beſtowed, is better than twice its Value obtained by Petition: I therefore, as in Preſence of the great Image, your Brother and Siſter, at this Inſtant, eraſe from my Mind forever what Thoughts I may have had prejudicial to the Love I ever bore you, as I will have you to do all ſuch as may cloud the unreſerved Complacency you uſed to appear with before me: And now *Quangrollart*, ſays he, let the Guard be drawn out before my *Covett*, and let the whole Country be entertained, for ſeven Days; proclaim Liberty to all Perſons confined; and let not the leaſt Sorrow appear in any Face throughout my *Colambat*.

I retired immediately, and gave the neceſſary Orders for the ſpeedy Diſpatch of my Father's Commands; which indeed were performed to the utmoſt; and nothing for ſeven Days was to be heard, through the whole Diſtrict of *Arndrummſtake*, but Joy and the Name of *Youwarkee*.

My Father, ſo ſoon as he had diſpatched the above Orders, ſent for the Children before him, whom he kiſſed and bleſſed, frequently lifting up his Eyes in Gratitude to the Great Image, for the unexpected Happineſs he enjoyed on that Occaſion; and then he ordered *Youwarkee* to let him know what had befallen her in her Abſence, and where ſhe lived, and with whom.

Youwarkee was ſetting out with ſome indirect Excuſes; but my Father abſolutely forbid her, and charged her only to mention plain Facts, without Flouriſhes. So ſhe began with her *Swangean*, and the accidental Fall ſhe had, your taking her in after it, and ſaving her Life. She told him, your continued Kindneſs ſo wrought upon her, that ſhe found herſelf uncapable of

diſeſteeming you, but never ſhewed her Affection, till, having examined every Particular of your Life, and finding you a worthy Man, ſhe could not avoid becoming your Wife; and ſhe ſaid, the Reaſon why ſhe always declined being ſeen by her Friends, in their *Swangeans*, was, for Fear ſhe ſhould be forced from you, tho' ſhe longed to ſee us; and that at laſt, ſhe was come by your Conſent; and, that had it reſted there only, ſhe might have come much ſooner; for that you would often have had her ſhew herſelf to her Friends, when you heard them, having ſtrong Deſires yourſelf to be known to them.

My Father upon hearing this, was ſo charmed with your Tenderneſs and Affection to his Daughter, that you already rival his own Iſſue in his Eſteem, and he is perſwaded he can never do enough for you or your Children.

The Noiſe of *Youwarkee*'s Return, and my Father's Rejoicing, ſoon ſpread over all *Normnbdſgrſutt*; and King *Georigetti* ſent Expreſs to my Father, to command him to attend with your Wife and Children at *Brandleguarp*, his Capital. Thither accordingly we all went, with a grand Retinue, and ſtaid twenty Days. The King took great Delight, as well as the Ladies of the Court, to hear *Youwarkee* and her Children talk *Engliſh*, and in being informed of you and your Way of Life; and, ſo fond was *Yurcumbourſe* (who, though not the King's Wife, is inſtead of one) of my Nephew *Tommy*, that, upon my Father's Return, ſhe took him to herſelf, and aſſured my Siſter, he ſhould continue near her Perſon till he was qualified for better Preferment. The King's Siſter *Jahamel*, would alſo have taken *Patty* into her Service; but ſhe begged to be permitted to attend her Mother to *Arndrumnſtake*;

drumnstake; so *Hallycarnia* her Sister, who chose to continue with *Jahamel*, was received in her Room.

Upon my Father's Return to *Arndrumnstake*, he found no less than fifteen Expresses from several *Colambs*, desiring to rejoice with him on the Return of his Daughter, with particular Invitations to him and her to spend some Time with them. My Father, though he hates more Pomp than is necessary to support Dignity, could do no less than severally visit them, with *Youwarkee*, attended by a grand Retinue, spending more or less Days with each; hoping when that was over, he should have some little Time to spend in Retirement with his Daughter before her Departure, who now began to be uneasy for you, who, she said, would suffer the greatest Concern in her Absence; but, upon their Return from those Visits, at about the End of four Months Progress, they found themselves in as little Likelihood of Retirement as the first Day: For the inferior *Colambs* were continually posting away, one after another, to perform their Respects to my Father, and all the inferior Magistrates of smaller Districts sending to know when they might be permitted to do the same. Poor *Youwarkee*, who saw no End of it, expressed her Concern for you in so lively a Manner to my Father, that, finding he could by no Means, put a Stop to the Good-will of the People, and not bearing the Thoughts of *Youwarkee*'s Departure, till she had now received all their Compliments, he resolved to keep her with him till the next Winter set in these Parts, and then to accompany her himself to *Graundevolet*. In the mean while, that you might not remain in an uneasy Suspence what was become of my Sister, he ordered me to dispatch Mes-

senger's express to inform you of the Reasons of her Stay: But I told him, if he pleased, I would execute that Office myself, with my Friend *Rosig*; with which he was very well pleased, and enjoined me to assure you of his Affection, and that he himself was Debtor to you for the Love and Kindness you had shewn his Daughter.

Thus Brother, says *Quangrollart*, I hope I have acquitted myself of my Charge to your Satisfaction, and it only now remains that I return you my Acknowledgments for your hearty Welcome to myself and Friend: Which (with Concern I speak it) I am afraid I shall not have an Opportunity to return at *Arndrumnslake*, the Distance being so immensely great, and you not having the *Graunder*. To-morrow Morning my Friend and I will set out on our Return home.

Quangrollart having done, I told him I could not but blush at the Load of undeserved Praises he had laid on me; but, as he had received his Notion of my Merits from a Wife, too fond to let my Character sink for want of her Support, it would be sufficient if himself could conceive of, and also represent me at his Return, in no worse a Light than other Men; and though it gave me Pain to think of losing my Wife so long, yet his Account of her Health, and the Company he assured me she would return in, would doubly compensate my Loss; and I begged of him, if it might be, with any Convenience, he would let some Messenger come the Day before her, to give me Notice of their Approach. As to their Departure on the Morrow, I told them I could by no Means think of that; as I had proposed to catch them a Dinner of fresh Fish in the Lake, and to shew them my Boat, and how and where

I came into this *Arkoe*; believing, by what I had observed, it would be no small Novelty to them. So having engaged them one Day more, we parted for that Night to Rest.

CHAP. XXIX.

The Author shews Quangrollart *and* Rosig *his Poultry; they are surprized at them; he takes them a fishing; they wonder at his Cart, and at his shooting a Fowl; they are terribly frightened at the firing of the Gun;* Wilkins *pacifies them.*

I Was heartily sorry to lose my Brother thus quickly, and still more so, to find it would be a long Time yet 'ere I should see my Wife; however, I was resolved to behave as chearfully as possible, and to omit nothing I could do, the few remaining Hours of *Quangrollart's* Stay with me, to rivet myself thoroughly in his Esteem, and to dismiss him with a most cordial Affection to me and the rest of my Children here with him. I rose early in the Morning to provide a good Breakfast for my Guests, and considering we should be in the Air most Part of that Day, I treated them with a Dish of hot Fish Soup, and set before them on the Table a jovial Bottle of Brandy, and my Silver Can: This last Piece I chose to shew them, as a Specimen of the Richness of my Houshold Furniture, and the Grandeur of my Living, concealing most of my other Curiosities, till *Pendlehamby* my Father-in-Law's Arrival; for I thought it would be imprudent not to have somewhat new of this Kind to display at his Entertainment.

After

After a plenteous Meal, we set out on our pleasurable Expedition; having told *Pedro* what to get for Dinner, and that I believed we should not return till late.

We first took a Turn in the Wood; but I did not lead them near my Tent, because I did not chuse my Wife should hear of that till she came. I then shewed them my Farm-yard and Poultry; which they were strangely surprized at, and wondered to see so many Creatures come at my Call, and run about my Legs, only upon a Whistle, tho' before there were only two or three to be seen. They asked me an hundred Questions about the Fowl, which I answered, and told them, these were some such as they had eaten, and called *Grullmotts*, the Day before. I afterwards carried them to hear the Music of those Plants that I call my Cream-cheese; which, as there happened to be a small Breeze stirring, made their usual Melody.

When we had diverted ourselves some Time in the Wood, we went to the wet Dock, where I shewed them my Boat. At first View they wondered what Use it was for; to satisfy them in that I stepped in, desiring them to follow me; but seeing the Boat's Agitation, they did not chuse to venture, till I assured them they might come with the greatest Safety: At length, with some Persuasion, and repeated Assurances, I prevailed on them to trust themselves with me.

We first rowed to the Bridge, where I informed them by what Accident I was drawn down the Stream, on the other Side of the Rock, and after a tedious and dangerous Passage, discharged safe in the Lake through that Opening.

I then told them how surprized I had been, just before I knew *Youwarkee*, with the Sight of her

Country

Country Folks; first on the Lake, and then taking Flight from that Bridge; and what had been my Thoughts, and how great my Terrors on that Occasion.

After we had viewed the Bridge, I took them to my *Rill*, (for by this Time they were reconciled to the Boat, and would help me to row it) and shewed them how I got Water. I then landed them to see the Method of Fishing; for which Purpose I laid my Net in proper Order, and fixing it as usual, I brought it round out at the *Rill*, and had a very good Hawl, with which I desired them to help me up; for though I could easily have done it myself, I had a Mind to let them have a Hand in the Sport, with which they were pleased. I perceived however, the Fish were not agreeable to them; for when any one came near their Hands, they avoided touching it. Notwithstanding, having got the Net on Shore, I laid it open: But to see how they stared at the Fish, creeping backwards, and then at me and the Net, it made me very merry to myself, though I did not care to shew it.

I drew up at that Draught twenty-two Fishes in all, of which a few were near an Ell long, several about two Feet, and some smaller. When they saw me take up the large ones in my Arms, and tumble them into the Boat, they both, unrequested, took up of the small ones, and put them in likewise; but dropping them every Time they struck their Tails, the Fish had commonly two or three Falls 'ere they came to the Boat.

I asked them how they liked that Sport, and they told me it was something very surprising, that I should know just where the Fish were, as they could see none before I pulled them up, and yet they did not hear me whistle. I perceived by this,

this, they imagined I could whistle the Fish together as well as the Fowls, and I did not undeceive them; being well enough pleased they should think me excellent for something, as I really thought they were on account of the *Graundee*.

Upon our Return, when I had docked my Boat, as there were too many Fish to carry up by Hand to the Grotto, I desired them to take a Turn upon the Shore till I fetched my Cart for it. I made what haste I could, and brought one of my Guns with me, which I determined upon some Occasion or other to fire off; for I took it they would be more surprised at the Explosion of that, than at any thing they had yet seen. Having loaded my Fish, and marched backwards, they eyed my Cart very much, and wondered what made the Wheels move about so; taking them for Legs it walked upon, till I explained the Reason of it, and then they desired to draw it, which they did with great Eagerness, one at a Time, the other observing its Motions.

As we advanced homewards, there came a large Water-Fowl, about the Size of a Goose, flying cross us. I bid them look at it, which they did. Says my Brother, I wish I had it. If you have a mind for it, says I, I'll give it you. I wish you would, says he, for I never saw any Thing like it in my Life. Stand still then, says I, and stepping two or three Yards before them, I fired, and down it dropt. I then turned about, to observe what Impression the Gun had made on them, and could not help laughing to see them so terrified. *Rosig*, before I could well look about, had got fifty Paces from me, and my Brother was lying behind the Cart of Fish. I called and asked them what was the Matter, and desired them to

come

come to me, telling them they ſhould receive no Harm, and offered my Brother the Gun to handle; but he, thanking me as much as if he had, retired to *Roſig*.

Finding they made a ſerious Affair of it, for I ſaw them whiſpering together, I was under ſome Apprehenſion for the Conſequences of my Frolick. Thinks I, if under this Diſguſt they take Flight, refuſing to hear me, and report that I was about to murder them, or tell any other pernicious Story to my Father of me, I am abſolutely undone, and ſhall never ſee *Youwarkee* more. So I laid down the Gun by the Fiſh, and moving ſlowly towards them, expoſtulated with them upon their Diſorder; aſſuring them, that though the Object before them might ſurprize them, it was but a common Inſtrument in my Country, which every Boy uſed to take Birds with; and proteſted to them, that the Gun of itſelf could do nothing without my Skill directing it; and that they might be ſure I ſhould never employ that, but to their Service. This, and a great deal more, brought us together again; and when we came to reaſoning coolly, they blamed me for not giving them Notice. Says I, there was no Room for me to explain the Operation of the Gun to you, whilſt the Bird was on the Wing; for it would have been gone out of my Reach before I could have made you ſenſible of that, and ſo have eſcaped me; which, as you deſired me to get it you, I was reſolved it ſhould not do. But for yourſelves, ſurely you could have no Diffidence in me: That is highly unbecoming of Man to Man, eſpecially Relations; and, above all, a Relation to whom you have brought the welcomeſt News upon Earth, in the Love of my dear Father, and his Reconciliation to my Wife.

At

At last, by Degrees, I brought them to confess, that it was only a groundless sudden Terror which suppressed their Reason for a while; but that what I said was all very true; and as their serious Reflection returned, they were satisfied of it. I then stepped for the Bird, and brought it to them: It was a very fine feathered Creature, and they were very much delighted with the Beauty of it, and desired it might be laid upon the Cart, and carried home.

All the Way we went afterwards to the Grotto, nothing was to be heard from them but my Praises, and what a great and wise Man Brother *Peter* was; and no Wonder now, Sister *Youwarkee*, (says *Quangrollart*) once knowing him, could never leave him. It was not my Business to gainsay this, but only to receive it with so much Modesty as might serve to heighten their good Opinion of me; and I found, upon my Wife's Return, that *Quangrollart* had painted me in no mean Colours to his Father.

I once more had the Pleasure of entertaining them, with the old Fare, and some of the fresh Fish, Part boiled and Part fried; which last they chose before the boiled. We made a very chearful Supper, talking over that Day's Adventures, and of their ensuing Journey home, after which we retired to Rest, mutually pleased. We all arose early the next Morning. We took a short Breakfast; after which *Quangrollart* and *Rosig* stuck their Chaplets with the longest and most beautiful Feathers of the Bird I shot, thinking them a fine Ornament. Being now ready for Departure, they embraced me and the Children, and were just taking Flight, when it came into my Head, that as the King's Mistress had taken *Tommy* into her Protection, it might possibly be

a Means of ingratiating him in her Favour, if I ſent him the Flagellet, (for I had, in my Wife's Abſence, made two others near as good, by copying exactly after it.) I therefore deſired to know, if one of them would trouble himſelf with a ſmall Piece of Wood, I very much wanted to convey to my Son. *Roſig* anſwered, with all his Heart; if it was not very long he would put it into his *Colapet* *. So I ſtepped in, and fetching the Flagellet, preſented it to *Roſig*. My Brother ſeeing it look oddly, with Holes in it, deſired (after he had aſked if it was not a little Gun) to have the handling of it. It was given him, and he ſurveyed it very attentively. Being inquiſitive into the Uſe of it, I told him it was a muſical Inſtrument, and played ſeveral Tunes upon it; with which he and his Companion were in Raptures. I doubt not, they would have ſat a Week to hear me, if I would have gone on; but I deſiring the latter to take care of its Safety, he put it in his *Colapet*, and away they went.

* A Bag they always carry round the Neck.

The End of the FIRST VOLUME.

Means of ingratiating him in her Favour, if I
ut him the Flageolet, (for I had, in my Wife's
bsence, made two others near as good, by
oying exactly after it.) I therefore desired to
now, if one of them would trouble himself with
small Piece of Wood, I very much wanted to
onvey to my Son. Kelly answered, with all his
Heart; if it was not very long he would put it
nto his Calapat*. So I hopped in, and fetching
he Flageolet, presented it to Kelly. My Bro-
her seeing it look oddly, with Holes in it, de-
ired (after he had sifted it was not a little Gun)
o have the handling of it. It was given him,
nd he surveyed it very attentively. Being inqui-
itive into the Use of it, I told him it was a mu-
ical instrument, and played several Tunes upon
; with which he and his Companion were in
Raptures. I doubt not, they would have lat a
Week to hear me, if I would have gone on; but
defining the latter to take care of his Safety, he
ut it in his Calapat, and away they went.

* A Bag they always carry round the Neck.

The End of the First Volume.